



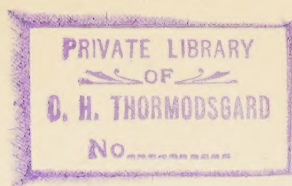


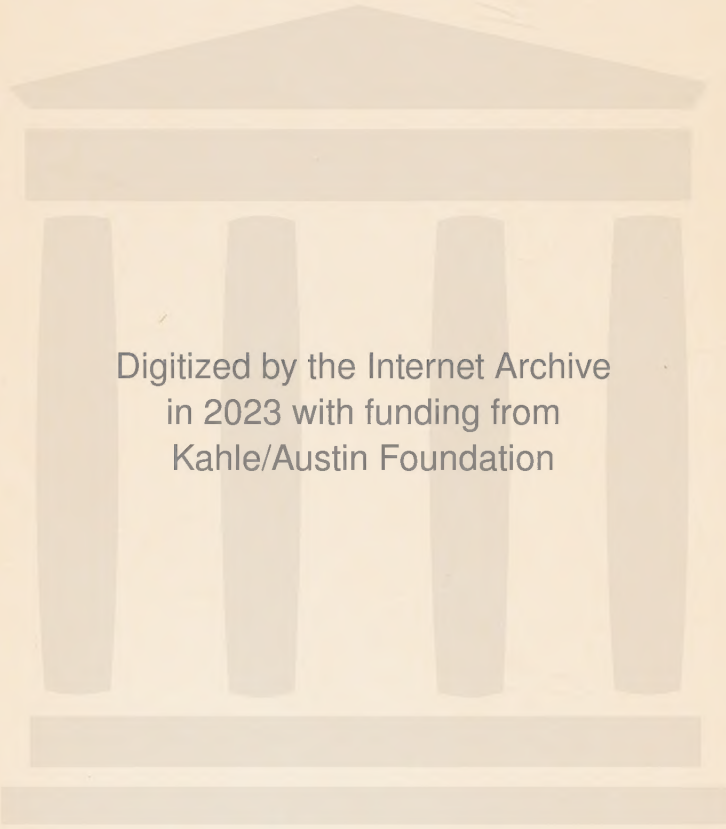
This book was given to the  
ST. OLAF COLLEGE LIBRARY

By \_\_\_\_\_

O.H. Thormodsgard

*O. H. V. Thormodsgard*





Digitized by the Internet Archive  
in 2023 with funding from  
Kahle/Austin Foundation









THE LEGAL EFFECTS OF RECOGNITION  
IN INTERNATIONAL LAW

*Published on a fund  
established by  
William Guggenheim  
of the Class of 1889  
University of Pennsylvania*



*The*  
Legal Effects of Recognition in  
International Law

*as*

*Interpreted by the Courts of the United States*

By

JOHN G. HERVEY, LL.B., PH.D.

*Instructor in Political Science, Wharton School of  
Finance and Commerce, University of Pennsylvania*



PHILADELPHIA  
UNIVERSITY OF PENNSYLVANIA PRESS

*London*  
*Humphrey Milford: Oxford University Press*

1928

5X4044  
HA

Copyright, 1928,  
by the

UNIVERSITY OF PENNSYLVANIA PRESS

PRINTED IN THE UNITED STATES OF AMERICA

LANCASTER PRESS, INCORPORATED  
LANCASTER, PENNSYLVANIA



## PREFACE

Few phases of International Law have received less study at the hands of international lawyers and research scholars than the effects of recognition upon the determination of individual rights and obligations. Nevertheless, these effects have been of the utmost importance in the courts, and with the continued non-recognition of Soviet Russia by the United States they promise to be of increasing importance. This study is presented in the hope that it will clarify the problems and stimulate further study and research in this field.

Little effort has been made in the course of this study to distinguish between the recognition of a state of insurgency, belligerency and independence. It appears from the cases that these differences have exerted little influence in the courts. However, it should be pointed out that the study is concerned primarily with the recognition of new states and new governments within old states. These have received the major attention of the courts.

The author wishes to acknowledge with pleasure his indebtedness to Hon. Roland S. Morris, at whose suggestion the study was undertaken. His encouragement and help during the preparation of the manuscript have proved invaluable. The writer is deeply indebted to Roland R. Foulke, Esq., whose pertinent criticisms have steered the writer from numerous errors. Special thanks are due Prof. Edwin D. Dickinson of the Law School of the University of Michigan and Osmond K. Fraenkel, Esq., of the New York Bar, and all others whose case notes and comments have appeared in the numerous legal publications.

JOHN G. HERVEY

PHILADELPHIA

iii

153759





## TABLE OF CONTENTS

		PAGE
	List of Cases .....	vii
CHAPTER		
I.	Introduction .....	1
II.	Preliminary Considerations .....	6
III.	Recognition by the Political Departments .....	25
IV.	Juristic Status of Unrecognized Governments ..	54
V.	Retroactive Effect of Recognition .....	82
VI.	Recognition and Legal Capacity .....	112
VII.	Extraterritorial Operation of Acts of Recognized and Unrecognized Governments .....	139
VIII.	Conclusions .....	156
	Bibliography .....	161
	Index .....	166



## LIST OF CASES

- Accessory Transit Co., Hamilton vs., 83 n, 91 n.  
 Agency of Canadian Car & Foundry Co., Ltd. vs. American Can Co., 125 n.  
 Aksionariornoye Obshchestvo vs. James Sagor & Co., 4, 49, 66, 96, 106, 128,  
 144.  
 American Banana Co. vs. United Fruit Co., 83 n, 84, 134 n, 141 n.  
 American Can Co., Agency of Canadian Car & Foundry Co., Ltd. vs., 125 n.  
 American Metal Co., Ricaud vs., 78, 93, 96, 105.  
 Ames, Terlinden vs., 27 n.  
 Andre vs. Beha, 151.  
*Annette & Dora*, 48.  
 Argumado, State of Yucatan vs., 45 n, 66, 116 n, 125 n.  
 Arkansas, Beers vs., 126 n.  
 Arredondo, United States vs., 35 n.  
*Athol*, the, 126 n.  
 Attrill, Huntington vs., 89 n.  
  
 Baiz, *In re*, 39 n.  
 Baldy vs. Hunter, 73 n, 145 n.  
 Banco de Londres y Mexico, Mitchell vs., 96 n.  
 Bank of England, City of Berne vs., 31 n, 41, 112 n, 115 n.  
 Bank of England, Dolder vs., 31 n, 40 n, 112 n.  
 Banque Internationale vs. Goukassow, 16 n, 101, 103 n, 139 n, 146 n.  
 Barclay, Taylor vs., 52 n, 115 n, 118.  
 Bartlesville Zinc Co., Cia. Minera Ygnacio Rodriguez Ramos S. A. vs., 16  
 n, 105 n.  
 Basch, Waldes vs., 116 n.  
 Bath, Triquet vs. 56 n.  
 Beers vs. Arkansas, 126 n.  
 Beha, Andre vs., 151.  
 Beha, First Russian Insurance Co. vs., 151 n.  
 Bello Corrunes, 77 n.  
 Berizzi Brothers Co. vs. Steamship *Pesaro*, 135.  
 Blacksmith, Fellows vs., 27 n.  
 Bluefield's Case, 142.  
 Borden, Luther vs., 27 n, 60.  
 Bourne vs. Bourne, 144.  
 Boyd, United States vs., 27 n.  
 Briggs vs. Lightboats, 126 n.  
 Brown vs. Piper, 39 n.  
 Brown vs. United States, 126 n.  
 Bruffy, Williams vs., 4, 14, 83 n, 87, 93 n, 105 n, 107, 145 n.  
 Buckley, Ketchum vs., 73 n.  
  
 Canada Southern Railway Co. vs. Gebhord, 103 n.  
*Carlo Poma*, the, 137 n.  
 Central Leather Co., Oetjen vs., 1 n, 4, 78, 85, 92, 98, 104, 107.  
 Central Leather Co., O'Neill vs., 45, 77 n, 83 n, 105 n.  
 Chae Chan Ping vs. United States, 18 n.  
 Chambers, Kennett vs., 39 n, 42, 46 n, 57, 89.  
*Charkieh*, the, 74.

- Cherokee Nation vs. Georgia, 27 n, 48, 122 n.  
 Cia. Minera Ygnacio Rodriguez Ramos S. A. vs. Bartlesville Zinc Co., 16 n,  
     105 n.  
 Cibrario, Preobazhenski vs., 63 n, 70 n, 118 n.  
 ——— Russian Republic vs., 63 n, 70 n, 116.  
 City of Berne vs. Bank of England, 31 n, 41, 112 n, 115 n.  
 Clarke, United States vs., 12, 27, 28, 30, 57 n, 126 n.  
 Clement, Yrissari vs., 46, 71.  
 Clydebank, Yzquierdo vs., 115 n.  
 Coale et al vs. Société Co-operative etc., 135.  
 Coffee vs. Grover, 39 n.  
 Cohens vs. Virginia, 18 n.  
 Cohn vs. United States Shipping Board, 134 n.  
 Colorado, Kansas vs., 126 n.  
 Colombian Government vs. Rothschild, 115 n.  
 Comanche County vs. Lewis, 126 n.  
 Comision, Cottam & Co. vs., 96 n.  
 Comision Reguladora, Molina vs., 95.  
 Commercial Pacific Cable Co. vs. Philippine National Bank, 136 n.  
 Commercial Trust Co. vs. Miller, 27 n.  
 Compania Mercantil Argentinian vs. United States Shipping Board, 126 n.  
 Comptoir de Mulhouse etc., Russian Commercial & Industrial Bank vs.,  
     103 n, 139 n, 140 n, 145 n, 146 n.  
 Consolidated Kansas City Smelting & Refining Co., De La O vs., 95 n.  
 Consul of Spain vs. *La Conception*, 10 n, 33, 70, 77.  
 Continental Tyre & Rubber Co., Ltd. vs. Daimler Co., Ltd., 136 n.  
 Cottam & Co. vs. Comision, 96 n.  
 Coxe's Lessee, McIlvaine vs., 9 n.  
  
 Daimler Co., Ltd., Continental Tyre & Rubber Co., Ltd. vs., 136 n.  
 Davis, the, 126 n.  
 Day & Kossuth, Emperor of Austria vs., 114 n, 116 n.  
 De Arrangois, Republic of Mexico vs., 115 n, 116 n, 122 n.  
 De Haber vs. Queen of Portugal, 114 n, 130.  
 De La O vs. Consolidated Kansas City Smelting & Refining Co., 95 n.  
 Delmas vs. Merchants National Insurance Co., 73 n, 145 n.  
 De Simone vs. Transportes Maritimos do Estado, 126 n, 138 n.  
 De Wutz vs. Hendricks, 59.  
 Dimond vs. Petit, 59.  
*Divina Pastora*, 34, 52 n, 60.  
 Dolder vs. Bank of England, 31 n, 40, 112 n.  
 ——— vs. Huntingfield, 112 n.  
 Donnell vs. Herring-Hall-Marvin Safe Co., 136 n.  
 Dora, the *Annette* &, 48.  
 Dreyfus, Peru vs., 52 n.  
 Drummond, President of the United States vs., 115 n.  
 Duke of Brunswick vs. King of Hanover, 113 n, 126 n.  
 Dunwell, State vs., 39 n.  
  
 Emergency Fleet Corporation, Fidelity Trust Co. vs., 134 n.  
 ——— Marshall Hall Grain Co. vs., 134 n.  
 ——— vs. Rosenberg Brothers & Co., 134 n.  
 ——— Sloan Shipyards vs., 134 n.  
 ——— Stewart vs., 134 n.  
 ——— vs. Texas Star Flour Mills, 134 n.  
 Emperor of Austria vs. Day & Kossuth, 114 n, 116 n.

- Emperor of Brazil, 114 n.  
*Exchange*, the, 127, 135.  
*Ex parte* Hitz, 39 n.  
 Eyre, Phillipa vs., 89 n.
- Fellows vs. Blacksmith, 27 n.  
 Fidelity Trust Co. vs. Emergency Fleet Corporation, 134 n.  
 First Russian Insurance Co. vs. Beha, 151 n.  
 Fleming vs. Page, 69 n, 141.  
 Folliett, Ogden vs., 89 n, 92 n.  
 Ford vs. Surget, 73 n.  
 Foster vs. Globe Venture Syndicate, 52 n.  
 Foster vs. Neilson, 35 n.  
 Fremont vs. United States, 39 n.
- Gagra*, the, 47 n.  
 Gaillard, Harcourt vs., 9 n.  
 Garcia vs. Lee, 35 n.  
 Garfield, Mallory Steamship Co. vs., 134 n.  
 Gebhord, Canada Southern Railway Co. vs., 103 n.  
 Gelston vs. Hoyt, 30, 31, 57, 58.  
 Georgia, Cherokee Nation vs., 27 n, 48, 122 n.  
 Gibbs vs. Société Industrielle des Metaux, 154 n.  
 Globe Venture Syndicate, Foster vs., 52 n.  
 Goukassow, Banque Internationale vs., 16 n, 101, 103 n, 139 n, 146 n.  
 Grover, Coffee vs., 39 n.  
 Guaranty Trust Co., Roumania vs., 126 n.  
 Guestier, Hudson vs., 29 n.  
 Gul Djmal, 137 n.  
 Gurdus vs. Philadelphia National Bank, 139 n.
- Hamilton vs. Accessory Transit Co., 83 n, 91 n.  
*Happy Couple*, the, 41.  
 Harcourt vs. Gaillard, 9 n.  
 Hassard vs. United States of Mexico, 129 n.  
 Hendricks, De Wutz vs., 59.  
 Hennenlotter vs. Norwich Fire Insurance Co., 139 n.  
 Hernandez, Underhill vs., 46 n, 83, 93 n, 107, 141 n.  
 Herring-Hall-Marvin Safe Co., Donnell vs., 136 n.  
 Hicks, United States vs., 27 n.  
 Himely, Rose vs., 11, 28, 56, 86 n.  
 Hitchcock, Oregon vs., 126 n.  
 Hitz, *ex parte*, 39 n.  
 Holliday, United States vs., 27 n.  
 Holmes, Terranzas vs., 94.  
 Home Insurance Co., 73.  
*Hornet*, the, 12, 52 n, 60, 115 n.  
 Hoyt, Gelston vs., 30 31, 57, 58.  
 ——— vs. Russell, 39 n.  
 Hudson vs. Guestier, 29 n.  
 Hullett & Co. vs. King of Spain, 113.  
 Hunter, Baldy vs., 73 n, 145 n.  
 Huntingfield, Dolder vs., 112 n.  
 Huntington vs. Attrill, 89 n.  
 Hutchings, United States vs., 10 n.  
 Hylton, Ware vs., 27 n, 88.



*In re* Baiz, 39 n.

*In the Manila*, 31 n.

Insurance Co., Mauran vs., 73 n.

Insurance Cos., United States vs., 73 n, 145.

Intercolonial Railway of Costa Rica, Mason vs., 129 n.

*Itata*, the, 27 n, 89.

James & Co. vs. Rossia Insurance Co., 154 n.

—— vs. Second Russian Insurance Co., 145, 148, 154 n.

Joint Stock Co. vs. National City Bank, 152.

Jones vs. United States, 38, 39 n, 119 n.

*Juniper*, the, 100.

Kansas vs. Colorado, 126 n.

—— Missouri Pacific Railroad Co. vs., 23 n.

Kawananokoa vs. Polyblank, 85, 126, 138 n.

Keene vs. McDonough, 15 n, 72.

Kennett vs. Chambers, 38, 39 n, 42, 46 n, 57, 89.

Ketchum vs. Buckley, 73 n.

King of Greece, 114 n.

King of Hanover, Duke of Brunswick vs., 113 n, 126 n.

King of Prussia vs. Kuepper's Administrator, 114 n.

King of Spain, Hullett & Co. vs., 113.

—— vs. Machado, 113 n.

—— vs. Oliver, 113, 115 n.

Kock, Lemkuhl vs., 105 n.

Kuepper's Administrator, King of Prussia vs., 114 n.

*La Compagnie Franco Belge du Chemin du Fer du Nord*, South African Republic vs., 113 n.

*La Conception*, Consul of Spain vs., 10 n, 33, 70, 77.

Lee, Garcia vs., 35 n.

Lee, United States vs., 126 n, 134.

Legal Tender Cases, 18 n.

Lehigh Valley Railway Company, Russian Government vs., 12 n, 51, 120, 126 n.

—— vs. State of Russia, 115.

Lemkuhl vs. Kock, 105 n.

Lewis, Comanche County vs., 126 n.

Lightboats, Briggs vs., 126 n.

Luther vs. Borden, 27 n, 60.

—— vs. Sagor, 4, 49, 66, 96, 106, 128, 144.

Lyde, United States vs., 35 n.

MacLeod vs. United States, 69 n, 141, 145 n.

McCleod, Queen vs., 126 n.

McDonough, Keene vs., 15 n, 72.

McIlvaine vs. Cox's Lessee, 9 n.

McRea, United States vs., 126 n.

Machado, King of Spain vs., 113 n.

*Maipo*, the, 136.

Mallory Steamship Co. vs. Garfield, 134 n.

*Manila*, *In the*, 31 n, 41 n.

Maria Josepha, 10 n.

Marshall Hall Grain Co. vs. Emergency Fleet Corporation, 134 n.

Mason vs. Intercolonial Railway of Costa Rica, 129 n.

Mauran vs. Insurance Co., 73 n.

- Merchants National Insurance Co., Delmas vs., 73 n, 145 n.  
 Mighell vs. Sultan of Johore, 75, 113 n.  
 Miller, Commercial Trust Co. vs., 27 n.  
 Missouri Pacific Railroad Co. vs. Kansas, 23 n.  
 Mitchell vs. Banco de Londres y Mexico, 96 n.  
 Molina vs. Comision Reguladora, 95.  
 Monte Blanco Real Estate Corporation vs. Wolvin Line, 95 n.  
 Murray vs. Vanderbilt, 46 n, 83 n, 91, 103.  
  
 Nankivel vs. Omsk All-Russian Government, 131.  
 National Bank of Haverhill, United States of Mexico vs., 125 n.  
 National City Bank, Joint Stock Co. vs., 152.  
 — Sokoloff vs., 16 n, 78, 103, 145, 147, 154 n.  
 Neilson, Foster vs., 35 n.  
*Neredie*, the, 27 n.  
*Nueva Anna*, 52 n, 61, 144.  
 North Atlantic Fisheries case, 7.  
 Norwich Fire Insurance Co., Hennenlotter vs., 139 n.  
 Nutt, Wright vs., 88.  
  
 Oetjen vs. Central Leather Co., 1 n, 4, 78, 85, 92, 98, 104, 107.  
 Ogden vs. Folliett, 89 n, 92 n.  
 Oliver, King of Spain vs., 113, 115 n.  
 Omsk All-Russian Government, Nankivel vs., 131.  
 One Hundred & Twenty Nine Packages, United States vs., 27 n.  
 O'Neill vs. Central Leather Co., 45, 77 n, 83 n, 105 n.  
 Oregon vs. Hitchcock, 126 n.  
  
 Page, Fleming vs., 69 n, 141.  
 Palmer, United States vs., 31, 33 n, 52 n, 60, 69.  
*Paquete Habana*, 56 n.  
 Parlement Belge, 47, 135, 138 n.  
*Pelican*, the, 41 n.  
 Pelican Insurance Co., Wisconsin vs., 126 n.  
 Pelzer vs. Perry, 62-65.  
*Penza & The Tobolsk*, 44, 117.  
 Pelzer vs. United Dredging Co., 62-65, 70 n.  
 Percheman, United States vs., 129.  
 Peru vs. Dreyfus Brothers, 52 n.  
 Peruvian Guano Co., Republic of Peru vs., 14, 15.  
*Pesaro*, the, 135, 137 n.  
 Petit, Dimond vs., 59.  
 Philadelphia National Bank, Gurdus vs., 139 n.  
 Phillipa vs. Eyre, 89 n.  
 Philippine National Bank, Commercial Pacific Cable Co. vs., 136 n.  
 Piper, Brown vs., 39 n.  
 Pirates, the United States vs., 62 n.  
 Polyblank, Kawanankooka vs., 85, 126, 138 n.  
*Porto Alexandre*, 47 n.  
 Porto Rico vs. Rosaly y Castillo, 129 n, 132 n.  
 Powles, Thompson vs., 52 n.  
 Preobazhensko vs. Cibrario, 63 n, 70 n, 118 n.  
 President of the United States vs. Drummond, 115 n.  
*Protector*, the, 27 n.  
  
 Queen vs. McCleod, 126 n.  
 Queen of Portugal, 114 n.  
 — De Haber vs., 114 n, 130.

- Republic of Honduras vs. Soto, 115 n, 116 n.  
 Republic of Mexico vs. De Arrangois, 115 n, 116 n, 122 n.  
 Republic of Peru vs. Peruvian Guano Co., 14, 15.  
 Rex, West Rand Gold Mining Co. vs., 56 n.  
 Reynes, United States vs., 39 n.  
 Ricaud vs. American Metal Co., 78, 93, 96, 105.  
 Rice, United States vs., 15 n, 68, 141, 145.  
*Rogdai*, the, 27 n, 44, 52 n, 118, 122 n, 124 n.  
 Rosaly y Castillo, Porto Rico vs., 129 n, 132 n.  
 Rose vs. Himely, 11, 28, 56, 86 n.  
 Rosenberg Brothers, Emergency Fleet Corporation vs., 134 n.  
 Russia Insurance Co. vs. United States, 67, 70 n, 74.  
 ——— James & Co. vs., 154 n.  
 Rothschild, Colombian Government vs., 115 n.  
 Roumania vs. Guaranty Trust Co., 126 n.  
 Russell, Hoyt vs., 39 n.  
 Russian Commercial & Industrial Bank vs. Comptoir de Mulhouse, 103 n,  
 139 n, 140 n, 145 n, 146 n.  
 Russian Government vs. Lehigh Valley Railroad Co., 12 n, 51, 120, 126 n.  
 Russian Reinsurance Co. vs. Stoddard, 105 n, 149.  
 Russian Republic vs. Cibrario, 63 n, 70 n, 116.  
 ——— Wulfsohn vs., 9, 10, 12, 127, 132, 137 n, 154 n.  
  
 Sagor, Luther vs., 4, 49, 66, 96, 106, 128, 144.  
 Salamandra Insurance Co. vs. Stoddard, 65.  
*Santissima Trinidad*, the, 87, 138 n.  
*Sapphire*, the, 12 n, 114, 116 n, 119, 121 n, 122 n, 125.  
 Second Russian Insurance Co., James & Co. vs., 145, 148, 154 n.  
 Shaw, Wilson vs., 27 n.  
 Simmons, White, Child & Beney Ltd. vs., 49, 101, 110 n, 146 n.  
*Siren*, the, United States vs., 126 n.  
 Sisal Sales Corporation, United States vs., 134 n, 137 n.  
 Sloan Shipyards vs. Emergency Fleet Corporation, 134 n.  
 Smith, Thorington vs., 13, 15, 16, 72 n, 145 n.  
 Société Co-operative etc., Coale et al vs., 135.  
 ——— Industrielle, Gibbs vs., 154 n.  
 Sokoloff vs. National City Bank, 16 n, 78, 103, 145, 147, 154 n.  
 Soto, Republic of Honduras vs., 115 n, 116 n.  
 South African Republic vs. La Compagnie etc., 113 n.  
 State vs. Dunwell, 39 n.  
 ——— vs. Wagner, 39 n.  
 State of Russia, Lehigh Valley Railroad Co. vs., 115 n.  
 Statham vs. Statham, 47 n.  
 Stewart vs. Emergency Fleet Corporation, 134 n.  
 Stoddard, Russian Reinsurance Co. vs., 105 n, 149.  
 ——— Salamandra Insurance Co. vs., 65.  
 Strang, United States vs., 136 n.  
 Suffolk Insurance Co., Williams vs., 35, 37, 59.  
 Sultan of Johore, Mighell vs., 75, 113 n.  
 Surget, Ford vs., 73 n.  
  
 Taylor vs. Barclay, 52 n, 115 n, 118.  
 Terlinden vs. Ames, 27 n.  
 Terranzas vs. Holmes, 94.  
 Texas vs. White, 27 n, 122 n, 145 n.  
 Texas Star Flour Mills, Emergency Fleet Corporation etc. vs., 134 n.

- Thompson vs. Powles, 52 n.  
 Thorington vs. Smith, 13, 15, 16, 72 n, 145 n.  
*Three Friends*, United States vs., 27 n, 52 n.  
 Transportes Maritimos do Estado, De Simone vs., 126 n, 138 n.  
 Triquet vs. Bath, 56 n.  
 Trumbull, United States vs., 12 n, 43, 89.  
  
 Underhill vs. Hernandez, 46 n, 83, 93 n, 107, 141 n.  
 United Dredging Co. vs. Pelzer, 62-65, 70 n.  
 United Fruit Co., American Banana Co. vs., 83 n, 84, 134 n, 141 n.  
 United States vs. Arredondo, 35 n.  
 — vs. Boyd, 27 n.  
 — Brown vs., 126 n.  
 — Chae Chan Ping vs., 18 n.  
 — Clarke vs., 12, 27, 28, 30, 57 n, 126 n.  
 — Fremont vs., 39 n.  
 — vs. Hicks, 27 n.  
 — vs. Holliday, 27 n.  
 — vs. Hutchings, 10 n.  
 — vs. Insurance Cos., 73 n, 145.  
 — Jones vs., 38, 39 n, 119 n.  
 — vs. Lee, 126 n, 134.  
 — vs. Lyde, 35 n.  
 — MacLeod vs., 69 n, 141, 145 n.  
 — vs. McRea, 126 n.  
 — vs. One Hundred & Twenty Nine Packages, 27 n.  
 — vs. Palmer, 31, 33 n, 52 n, 60, 69.  
 — vs. Percheman, 51, 129.  
 — vs. the Pirates, 62 n.  
 — vs. Reynes, 39 n.  
 — vs. Rice, 15 n, 68, 141, 145.  
 — Rossia Insurance Co. vs., 67, 70 n, 74.  
 — vs. the *Siren*, 126 n.  
 — vs. Sisal Sales Corporation, 134 n, 137 n.  
 — vs. Strang, 136 n.  
 — vs. *Three Friends*, 27 n, 57 n.  
 — vs. Trumbull, 12 n, 43, 89.  
 — vs. Wagner, 39 n, 113 n, 115 n.  
 — vs. Wall, 27 n.  
 — vs. Yorba, 35 n.  
  
 United States Shipping Board, Cohn vs., 134 n.  
 — Compania Mercantil Argentinian vs., 126 n.  
 United States of Mexico, Hassard vs., 129 n.  
 — vs. Haverhill National Bank, 125.  
  
 Vanderbilt, Murray vs., 46 n, 83 n, 91, 103.  
 Virginia, Cohens vs., 18 n.  
  
 Wagner, State vs., 39 n.  
 — United States vs., 39 n, 113 n, 115 n.  
 Wall, United States vs., 27 n.  
 Waldes vs. Basch, 116 n.  
 Ware vs. Hylton, 27 n, 88.  
 West Rand Gold Mining Co. vs. Rex, 56 n.  
 White, Child & Beney Ltd. vs. Simmons, 49, 101, 110 n, 146 n.  
 White, Texas vs., 27 n, 122 n, 145 n.

- Williams vs. Bruffy, 4, 14, 83 n, 87, 93 n, 105 n, 107, 145 n.  
—— vs. Suffolk Insurance Co., 35, 37, 59.  
Wilson vs. Shaw, 27 n.  
Wisconsin vs. Pelican Insurance Co., 126 n.  
Wolvin Line, Monte Blanco Real Estate Corporation vs., 95 n.  
Wright vs. Nutt, 88.  
Wulfsohn vs. Russian Republic, 9, 10, 12, 127, 132, 137 n, 154 n.  
  
Yorba, United States vs., 35 n.  
Yrissari vs. Clement, 46, 71.  
Yucatan, State of, vs. Argumedo, 45 n, 66, 116 n, 125 n.  
Yzquierdo vs. Clydebank, 115 n.



## CHAPTER I

### INTRODUCTION

In recent years the legal aspects of recognition have assumed unprecedented importance. This is especially true as regards the United States and England. New states and new governments within old states have emerged to compel a reconsideration of recognition policies by the Foreign Offices. Likewise new situations before the courts have made it necessary for them to re-examine and restate the fundamental principles which control in recognition cases.

In 1913 Huerta, Madero, and Carranza began to stage a political *corrida de toros* in which at least one participant, Madero, expired, while the Family of Nations stood aghast. The United States was not only a curious spectator, but her Chief Executive protested that "such pretended governments" would not be "countenanced or dealt with."<sup>1</sup>

Carranza emerged as the political chieftain. The United States and eight of the Latin American republics recognized him as the head of the *de facto* government on October 19, 1915.<sup>2</sup> Carranza, in turn, waved a *constitucional capa* before foreign nations through his proposed agrarian reforms, nationalization of subsoil rights, and limitations as to the lands which foreigners may own in Mexico.<sup>3</sup> These anti-foreign constitutional reforms caused strained relations between the United States and Mexico from 1917 to 1920. They stood back of the refusal to recognize the Obregon government and the diplomatic deadlock which lasted from 1921 to 1923.

---

<sup>1</sup> President Wilson, "Annual Message to Congress," *New York Times*, December 3, 1913.

<sup>2</sup> *Oetjen vs. Central Leather Company*, 246 U. S., 1918, 297. In this case the court reviews the events in Mexico during this period.

<sup>3</sup> *New York Times*, *Current History Magazine*, September, 1927, p. 846.

These difficulties were adjusted at the Niagara Falls Conference in 1923. Thereupon the United States accorded full recognition. But our State Department protested vigorously in the fall of 1925 when the Mexican Congress attempted to put the constitutional provisions into operation.

Soviet Russia has become a thorn in the side of the foreign offices of all the larger states.<sup>4</sup> Some of the powers have granted recognition only to have its withdrawal forced upon them by the non-observance of her solemn undertakings. Other governments have accorded recognition and later have found that the Russian diplomatic representatives were *persona non grata*, while some states have consistently refused recognition only to have their policies crucified upon a lurid cross of economic imperialism.

New states emerged from former empires as a result of the blast from Mars of a decade ago. Czechoslovakia, Jugoslavia and Poland suddenly found their ambitions for statehood realized. They constituted new international personalities. They had to be dealt with. They could not be disregarded by the old states. This was early realized by the United States, for in the course of his message to Congress on the Essential Terms of Peace in Europe,<sup>5</sup> President Wilson acknowledged the existence of these problems and their implications. Practical exigencies, political considerations and his belief in the right of self-determination were fused in his recognition policy toward the new states.

This study is not concerned with the wisdom of his or any other policy. It is only incidentally concerned with the recognition policy of any country. It does not purport to be a study of American policy or policies. Admirable studies covering these points have been made.<sup>6</sup> It is not concerned

---

<sup>4</sup> At this point the words "government," "power," and "state" are used interchangeably.

<sup>5</sup> January 22, 1917.

<sup>6</sup> Julius Goebel, Jr., *Recognition Policy of the United States*, 1915; N. D. Houghton, *De Facto Governments*, 1927; Taylor Cole, *Recognition Policy of the United States Since 1901*, 1928.

with the meaning of recognition, nor with the importance of recognition, except insofar as individual rights before the courts have been involved. A concise study of these points is presented in the succeeding chapter for purposes of clarity.

It is a study of the legal effects of recognition as interpreted and applied by the municipal courts of the United States and England. It deals with cases and controversies before courts of law and equity. The awards of arbitration commissions and mixed claims commissions are outside the scope of this treatise, and for that reason no attention is given to such awards.

A foreign government establishes a credit in the United States and that government is subsequently overturned; a foreign state aids and abets an American corporation in securing a monopoly in that country, and later its acts are called into question in the courts of the United States in a suit involving prosecution for violation of the anti-trust laws; or a foreign public vessel anchors in an American harbor, whereupon the representatives of an insurrectory faction in that country secure an attachment upon the vessel and demand that the courts adjudge that it is the lawful government and entitled to the vessel in question. The adjudication of these and similar cases is illustrative of the complex legal problems which have centered around recognition. The English and the American courts have found from their examinations that certain legal results flow. Under the theory of *stare decisis* these legal results are important.

From an examination of the cases certain postulates stand out. In the first place the courts are unanimously agreed that recognition by the political departments of the government is binding upon the courts. They cannot enter into an independent examination in order to determine for themselves which is the lawfully instituted government in a designated territory: with what results, especially as regards Soviet

Russia, we shall see when we come to examine this point later.

In the second place the courts of the *recognizant* state<sup>7</sup> cannot sit in judgment on the acts of the recognized government. This is subject to certain limitations which will be considered at a later point. However, from the rule that the courts of the *recognizant* states will not sit in judgment on the acts of the recognized governments the courts have derived a second rule. They regard the effects of recognition as retroactive. It validates everything which has been done by the recognized government from the time of its inception in so far as the courts of the *recognizant* government are concerned.

Furthermore recognition is necessary to give a state or government a status before the courts of *recognizant* states. They cannot be parties plaintiff unless they are recognized: they are not entitled to immunity from suit in the absence of recognition. These questions have led the courts into uneasy fields. Finally the protection of property has evoked much consideration and the cases dealing therewith are not uniform.

In most of the recent recognition cases the courts have been gradually feeling their way. They have had few studies to guide them. The rules which were enunciated in the early cases have been blended into the new cases and followed on the principle of *stare decisis* rather than for rational reasons. Recently, in an important English case,<sup>8</sup> the court followed a precedent established by two American cases and the judges pointed out that these American cases laid down the rule with little or no reasoning. However, an examination of these cases shows that the courts reasoned by implication rather than directly.<sup>9</sup>

---

<sup>7</sup> Hereafter the writer will use this term to denote the state or government according to recognition.

<sup>8</sup> *Luther vs. Sagor*, 1921, L.R. 1 K.B. 460; on appeal, 1921, L.R. 3 K.B. 532.

<sup>9</sup> The cases referred to were *Williams vs. Bruffy*, 96 U. S., 1877, 176, and *Oetjen vs. Central Leather Company*, 246 U. S., 1918, 297.

The object of the present work is to study the effects of recognition as revealed by the decisions of the courts, and to determine critically the correctness or incorrectness of the positions assumed by the courts with a view toward furnishing a guide for future use in the determination of such cases and controversies.



## CHAPTER II

## PRELIMINARY CONSIDERATIONS

With the emergence of the "states system" from the Treaty of Westphalia in 1648, the basis of society shifted from a single state to a collectivity of states. The original community, composed only of the Christian states of Europe, gradually expanded and came to include Turkey, Russia, the United States and the Spanish Americas. More recently Japan and China entered, together with the post-war countries of Europe, so that at the present time the "community of states" embraces all the discovered portions of the globe. It is no longer a Christian European system. It is universal in its geographical extent as well as in its religious and cultural embrace.<sup>1</sup>

Incident to the emergence of the "states system" came the so-called fundamental rights of existence, independence, equality, intercourse, respect, and jurisdiction, around which International Law has developed.<sup>2</sup> To call them fundamental, or to call them rights in the Austinian sense, is perhaps misleading. They are fundamental only in the sense that they constitute the basic, underlying assumptions upon which states act in their intercourse with one another. They are assumptions or postulates of action in the international community, rather than interests, in the exercise of which the protection of a superior power can be invoked. This is true because in inter-state life there is no common superior to which resort can be had.<sup>3</sup>

---

<sup>1</sup> Oppenheim, *International Law*, v. I, pp. 31-34.

<sup>2</sup> See 10 *A. J.*, p. 125, for statement issued by the American Institute of International Law. Contra, Sterling Edmunds, *Lawless Law of Nations*, pp. 100-114.

<sup>3</sup> Address of Elihu Root, April 24, 1908, reported in 2 *A. J.*, pp. 451-457. Such sanctions as exist are, "appeal to public opinion, publication of cor-

Nevertheless, they underlie the international structure. States rely upon them for the enforcement of their rights and obligations. Before a state, or a government, may exercise, or claim the right to exercise, these so-called fundamental rights, it must be accorded recognition individually by each of the members which constitute the International Family. An adoption into the family must take place.

In this respect recognition is important because it confers upon a state, or a government, the legal right to exist. Prior to recognition it can claim the right to exist only so far as its subjects are concerned. Subsequent to recognition it not only can claim, but can demand, the right to exist as a member of the Family of Nations. From the moment of recognition a state is entitled to all the rights of an international personality.<sup>4</sup>

A discussion of the legal effects of recognition necessarily must be predicated upon a knowledge of certain elementary considerations. These include the nature of recognition, the kinds of recognition, the methods followed in according recognition, and the arm of the government charged with the exercise of the function. These stand back of any consid-

---

respondence, censure by parliamentary vote, demand for arbitration with the odium attendant on a refusal to arbitrate, rupture of relations, reprisals, etc.," award of the Hague Tribunal, North Atlantic Fisheries case, *Hague Court Reports*, *Carnegie Endowment Edition*, p. 167.

<sup>4</sup> On the meaning of recognition see: Philip Marshall Brown, *International Society*, 1923, ch. 4; *ibid.*, *International Realities*, ch. 3; Pitt Corbett, *Leading Cases on International Law*, 1922, pp. 47-50, 68-70, 83-85; G. B. Davis, *Elements of International Law*, 1908, 3d Ed., 34, 42; Sterling Edmunds, *Lawless Law of Nations*, 1925, pp. 115-132; Julius Goebel, Jr., *Recognition Policy of the United States*, 1915; R. R. Foulke, *Treatise on International Law*, v. I, pp. 112-118; W. E. Hall, *International Law*, 1909, 6th Ed., pp. 82-92; H. W. Halleck, *International Law*, 1908, 4th Ed., v. I, pp. 70, 71, 83-92; A. S. Hershey, *Essentials of International Public Law and Organization*, pp. 199-215; C. C. Hyde, *International Law*, v. I, pp. 55-82 and notes; T. J. Lawrence, *Principles of International Law*, 1910, 4th Ed., pp. 83-92; Kent's *Commentary on International Law*, 1866, pp. 95-106; J. B. Moore, *Digest of International Law*, 1906, v. I, pp. 72-163, 206-241; Oppenheim, *International Law*, 1920, 3d Ed., v. I, pp. 134-139; Wharton, *Digest of International Law of the United States*, 1886, v. I, pp. 509-553; Wilson and Tucker, *International Law*, 1922, 8th Ed., pp. 47-55; Q. D. Woolsey, *Introduction to the Study of International Law*, 1899, 6th Ed., pp. 40-43; 33 *Corpus Juris*, pp. 393-395; 15 *Ruling Case Law*, pp. 106-108.

eration given to the question by the courts. For this reason it is necessary that we give brief consideration to each of them.<sup>5</sup>

Turning to the nature of the recognition function, we find that it "is an outward and visible manifestation of the mental comprehension of an existing fact or state of affairs. . . . As used in International Law, the term 'recognition' is confined to those facts which are material in international life."<sup>6</sup> The facts in international life of which cognizance must be taken include the existence of a state of war, membership of a body politic in the Community of States, or internal changes in state life, such as a turnover in government within the state.<sup>7</sup>

The majority of writers regard the above conception of recognition as too broad.<sup>8</sup> Oppenheim uses the term to connote the process by which non-original members have been initiated into the Family of Nations. He says that for every state, that is not already but wants to be a member, recognition is necessary.<sup>9</sup>

Oppenheim acknowledges that many writers do not agree with him. Hall, Revier and others contend that state existence is a fact to be determined by the state itself. When self-satisfied of such existence it enters of its own right into international life.<sup>10</sup> Nevertheless, these writers acknowledge that recognition is necessary before a new state can demand intercourse with other states. Seemingly they arrive at the same conclusions as Oppenheim. The necessity for the reception of new members arises from facts, i.e. the ex-

---

<sup>5</sup> These are aspects of recognition to which treatment has been given by the courts in dealing with the question.

<sup>6</sup> R. R. Foulke, *International Law*, v. I, p. 112.

<sup>7</sup> *Ibid.*, pp. 112-113.

<sup>8</sup> An excellent collection of the opinions of various writers has been made by Foulke, *op. cit.*, notes pp. 112-113.

<sup>9</sup> Oppenheim, *International Law*, v. I, p. 134. "Those states which are members (of the Family of Nations) are either original members because the Law of Nations grew up gradually between them through custom and treaties, or they are members which have been recognized by the body of members already in existence when they were born."

<sup>10</sup> Hall, *op. cit.*, secs. 2 and 26.

istence of international life and the demand for inter-state intercourse.

However, the controversy over the nature of the recognition function has not involved the courts. They regard a state or government as a self-created entity.<sup>11</sup> It exists without recognition.<sup>12</sup> Recognition is the acknowledgment of an existing fact: it does not create the fact, say the courts.<sup>13</sup>

In *Wulfsohn et al. vs. The Russian Republic*, 1923, in adjudicating the confiscation of certain furs owned by the plaintiff in Russia, for which recovery was asked, Mr. Justice Andrews of the New York courts took this view of the recognition function. He felt that recognition did not create the state, although it might be desirable.<sup>14</sup> The recognition by other states or governments is merely concrete evidence or testimony of friendly relations. It does not create the state or government, said the court, although necessary for certain purposes.

The same opinion was expressed on appeal.<sup>15</sup> A new government springing into existence does not require the recognition of other governments to confirm its international personality. So long as it confines its action to its own citizens, and to the limits of its own territory, it may dispense with such recognition. But if it desires to enter into the society of na-

<sup>11</sup> In *Harcourt vs. Gaillard*, 12 Wheaton, 1827, 523 at 527, the court said: "It has never been admitted by the United States that they acquired anything by way of cession from Great Britain by the Treaty of Peace, 1783. It has been viewed only as a recognition of pre-existing rights. . . . The treaty . . . amounts to a simple recognition of the independence . . . of the United States. . . ." See also *McIlvaine vs. Coxe's Lessee*, 4 Cranch, 1808, 209 at 212.

<sup>12</sup> Obviously in some cases states have been created by treaty, such as some of the post-war European states which received their birthright from the Versailles Conference.

<sup>13</sup> Editorial comment, *Saint Louis Law Review*, 1917, v. 2, p. 37.

<sup>14</sup> "Whether or not a government exists, clothed with the power to enforce its authority within its own territory, obeyed by the people over whom it rules, capable of performing the duties and fulfilling the obligations of an independent power, able to enforce its claims by military force, is a fact, not a theory. For its recognition does not create the state, although it may be desirable. So only are diplomatic relations permitted. Treaties made with the government which it succeeds may again come into effect." 234 N. Y. 372, 138 N. E. 24 at 25.

<sup>15</sup> 195 N. Y. Supp. 472; 202 App. Div. 421.

tions, all the members of which recognize rights to which they are mutually entitled and duties which they may be called upon reciprocally to fulfill, "such recognition becomes essentially necessary to the complete participation of the new state in all the advantages of this society."<sup>16</sup>

This view was taken in 1923 by Mr. Chief Justice Taft as sole arbitrator in the controversy between Great Britain and Costa Rica. Great Britain had refused to recognize the Tinoco regime. Mr. Chief Justice Taft, in the course of his award, held that by such refusal Great Britain was not estopped to urge the claims of British subjects, where the claims were dependent upon acts and contracts of the Tinoco government. The Tinoco government had been recognized by practically all of the Latin America republics and by some of the European powers, although unrecognized by the United States and Great Britain. The regime was shown by the evidence to be a *de facto* government,<sup>17</sup> and Mr. Chief Justice Taft gave judgment against Costa Rica.

This point was raised in the courts of the United States about 1815 in a number of cases involving the activities of the Buenos Ayres government.<sup>18</sup> In the course of one of the cases<sup>19</sup> it was argued that the existence of the United States as an independent power began in 1776 and not with the Treaty of Peace in 1783. It was contended by analogy that the independence of Buenos Ayres began with its declaration of independence, and that since this independence was a matter of notoriety throughout the entire world, our courts were bound to treat it as an independent nation. Mr. Chief Justice Marshall was of the opinion that a nation be-

<sup>16</sup> *Wulfsohn vs. Russian Republic*, 195 N. Y. Supp. 472, 202 App. Div. 421 at 422.

<sup>17</sup> 18 *A. J.* 147 at 155. The text of the award is reproduced in full.

<sup>18</sup> *Consul of Spain vs. The Conception*, 1819, Fed. Case No. 3, 137, 2 Wheeler Cr. Cas. 597, Brunner Col. Cas. 497; *The Maria Josepha*, 1819, Fed. Case No. 9,078, Brunner, Col. Case 500, 2 Wheeler Cr. Case 600; *U. S. vs. Hutchings*, 1817, Fed. Case No. 15, 429, 2 Wheeler Cr. Case 453.

<sup>19</sup> *United States vs. Hutchings*, 1817, Fed. Cas. No. 15, 429, 2 Wheeler Cr. C. 543.



comes independent from its declaration of independence only as respects its own government. Before it can be considered independent by the judiciary of foreign nations, it is necessary that "its existence should be recognized by the executive authority of those nations." In the absence of executive recognition of the Buenos Ayres government the court refused to acknowledge its national seal or the validity of documents and instruments bearing the purported seal.

Recognition is not compulsory. It is voluntary or optional.<sup>20</sup> Each state judges for itself whether a new state or a new government within an old state merits recognition. This formed the basis of Mr. John Bassett Moore's observation that "recognition is the assurance given to a new state that it will be permitted to hold its place and rank, in the character of an independent political organism, in the Family of Nations. The rights and attributes of sovereignty belong to it independently of all recognition, but it is only after it has been recognized that it is assured of exercising them. Regular political relations exist only between states that reciprocally recognize them. Recognition is therefore useful, even necessary, to the new state."<sup>21</sup>

The first expression on the point by American courts is found in *Rose vs. Himely*.<sup>22</sup> This case arose after St. Domingo had broken off relations with France but prior to its recognition by the United States. Certain acts of confiscation were at issue. In his opinion Mr. Chief Justice Marshall observed that "it is for governments to decide whether they will consider St. Domingo as an independent nation, and until such decision shall be made, or France shall relinquish her claim, courts of justice must consider the ancient state of

---

<sup>20</sup> Except in consequence of particular conventions, no state is obliged to accord it. "But the refusal may give rise to measures of retorsion. When, after the formation of the Kingdom of Italy, certain German states persisted in refusing to recognize it, Count Cavour withdrew the *exequaturs* of their consuls. Recognition was then accorded." Moore, *Digest*, v. I, p. 72.

<sup>21</sup> Moore, *Digest*, v. I, p. 72.

<sup>22</sup> 4 Cranch, 1808, 241.

things as remaining unaltered, and the sovereign power of France over that colony as still subsisting." This doctrine was quoted with approval in *Clark vs. United States*,<sup>23</sup> and by implication in *The Hornet*.<sup>24</sup>

It has received its latest affirmation in *Wulfsohn et al. vs. Russian Republic*.<sup>25</sup> Justice Rich in delivering the opinion of the court in that case said: "Every other State is at liberty to grant or refuse recognition, and until such recognition becomes universal on the part of other States, the new State becomes entitled to the exercise of its external sovereignty as to those of the States only by whom that sovereignty has been recognized."<sup>26</sup>

A distinction is made by most writers between the recognition of a state and the recognition of a change of government within an old state. Little reference to the distinction is made in the judicial opinions dealing with recognition. Yet several of the cases can best be interpreted with this distinction in mind. This is especially applicable to those cases pending in the courts of the recognizing state at the time of the overthrow of the recognized government.<sup>27</sup>

In the case of a new government within an old state, this does not mean that other states cannot take cognizance of such new government without formal recognition. Indeed, they may. But such cognizance does not necessarily admit the legality of the recognized government.<sup>28</sup> Recognition of a new government may be either as the *de jure* or the *de facto* government. A "*de jure* government in International Law means 'one which, in the opinion of the person using the phrase, ought to possess the powers of sovereignty though

<sup>23</sup> 5 Federal Cases (No. 2,838), p. 932; on appeal, 8 Peters, 1834, 436.

<sup>24</sup> 12 Federal Cases (No. 6,705), 1870, p. 529, 2 Abb. U. S. 35, 11 Int. Rev. Rec. 6.

<sup>25</sup> 202 App. Div. 421, 195 N. Y. Supp. 472.

<sup>26</sup> *Wulfsohn vs. Russian Republic*, *op. cit.* at 422.

<sup>27</sup> *The Sapphire*, 11 Wallace, 1871, 164; *U. S. vs. Trumbull*, 48 Federal, 1891, 94; *Russian Gov. vs. Lehigh Valley Railway Co.*, 293 Fed., 1919, 133.

<sup>28</sup> Hershey, *International Public Law and Organization*, Rev. Ed., p. 210.

at the time it may be deprived of them,' while a *de facto* government is one which is 'really in possession of them, although the possession may be wrongful or precarious.'"<sup>29</sup>

In *Thorington vs. Smith*,<sup>30</sup> which involved the juristic status of the Southern Confederacy, Mr. Chief Justice Chase made the interesting observation that "there are several degrees of what is called *de facto* government."

A *de facto* government "in its highest degree, assumes a character very closely resembling that of a lawful government."<sup>31</sup> This is when the usurping government expels the regular authorities from their customary seats and functions," and establishes itself in their place, and becomes the actual government of a country. The distinguishing characteristic of such a government is, "that adherents to it in war against the government *de jure* do not incur the penalties of treason; and under certain limitations, obligations assumed by it in behalf of the country, or otherwise, will, in general, be respected by the government *de jure* when restored. . . ."<sup>32</sup>

The Commonwealth of England under Cromwell as Protector constituted a *de facto* government. But the Southern Confederacy was not a *de facto* government in the same sense. "No treaty was made by it with any civilized State," as in the case of England. "No obligations of a national character were created by it, binding after its dissolution, on the States which it represented, or on the National Government."<sup>33</sup> This does not mean that the Southern Confederacy was not a government *de facto*. It was, but it was of another type.

In the cases dealing with *de facto* governments, the courts recognize a distinction which depends upon the extent of the

---

<sup>29</sup> Lord Justice Warrington, *Luther vs. Sagor*, 1921, L. R. 3 K. B. 532 at 551; Wheaton, *International Law*, 5th English Edition (1916), p. 36.

<sup>30</sup> 8 Wallace, 1869, 1.

<sup>31</sup> The Chief Justice used the term "lawful" in the sense of a *de jure* government. Such is the implication gathered from a reading of the decision.

<sup>32</sup> *Thorington vs. Smith*, 8 Wallace, 1869, 1 at 8.

<sup>33</sup> *Ibid.*

territorial operation of the *de facto* government in question. "One of them is such as exists after it has expelled the regularly constituted authorities from the seats of power and public offices and established its own functionaires in their places, so as to represent in fact the sovereignty of the nation. Such was the government of England under the Commonwealth established upon the execution of the King and the overthrow of the loyalists. . . . The other kind of *de facto* governments . . . is such as exists where a portion of the inhabitants of a country have separated themselves from the parent state and established an independent government."<sup>34</sup>

This distinction is of practical importance. If the temporary government is in control of only a part of the territory occupied by its predecessor, as was the case of the Southern Confederacy, recognition of such *de facto* government may constitute an affront to the state which has not relinquished authority over the territory in question. But a different situation is faced where the temporary government occupies the entire territory. Recognition of such a government does not and by nature cannot constitute an offense against the preceding government when the latter is restored to power. Also, the restored government, as against the recognizing government, is not in general entitled to question the validity of the acts of the temporary government.<sup>35</sup>

The distinction between recognition of a government as a *de jure* and a *de facto* government appears to be unimportant as a matter of municipal law in the courts of the recognizing state. Either form of recognition is binding upon its courts. This exact issue was before the English courts in the *Republic of Peru vs. Peruvian Guano Company*.<sup>36</sup> In that case

<sup>34</sup> *Williams vs. Bruffy*, 96 U. S., 1817, 176.

<sup>35</sup> See the award of the Permanent Court of Arbitration at the Hague, Oct. 11, 1921, in the case of the *French Claims Against Peru*, 16 *A. J.* 16, pp. 480-484; Hyde, v. 1, pp. 59-63, on the time of according recognition to a new state produced by revolution.

<sup>36</sup> 1887, L. R. 36 Ch. Div. 489.

one of the principal grounds relied on by the plaintiff was that the agreement had been made on behalf of the *de facto* government of the Republic of Peru which was not the *de jure* government. Justice Chitty, in the course of his opinion, held that the court was bound to take cognizance of the recognition of a *de facto* government by the government of his country as soon as it had been shown that a *de facto* government of a foreign state had been recognized by the government of the country; no further inquiry was permitted in the courts of the recognizant state.

The English court declined to investigate, and indeed had not the proper means for investigating, the title of the actual Government of Peru, or any other foreign state which had been thus recognized by the English government. The court held that the attempted distinction between the *de facto* and the *de jure* government which ran through the statement of claim was untenable.<sup>37</sup> The court felt that the action of the *de jure* government of Peru in declaring void the acts of its *de facto* predecessor was not binding upon a foreign state, England in this case, which had recognized the temporary *de facto* government.

In like manner the courts of the United States have uniformly held that they cannot examine the acts of recognized *de facto* governments. In numerous instances their acts have been before the American courts. For most purposes they have treated their acts as valid, and have refused to sit in judgment on them.<sup>38</sup>

The legal effects of the acts of recognized *de jure vs. de facto* governments were considered by the United States Supreme Court in 1869. In considering the acts of a *de facto* government of the second type, the court said that such government might perhaps be more aptly denominated a

---

<sup>37</sup> *Republic of Peru vs. Peruvian Guano Co.*, 1887, L. R. 36 Ch. Div. 489 at 497.

<sup>38</sup> *United States vs. Rice*, 4 Wheaton, 1819, 246; *Keene vs. McDonough*, 8 Peters, 1834, 308; *Thorington vs. Smith*, 8 Wallace, 1869, 1.



government of paramount force. "Its distinguishing characteristics are that its existence is maintained by active military power . . . against the rightful authority of an established and lawful government; and, that while it exists, it must necessarily be obeyed in civil matters by private citizens who, by acts of obedience, rendered in submission to such force, do not become responsible, as wrong doers, for those acts, though not warranted by the laws of the rightful government." Actual governments of this sort "are usually administered directly by military authority, but they may be administered also by civil authority, supported more or less directly by military force."<sup>39</sup>

In case the recognizant state has expressly refused to accord recognition to such a *de facto* government, or a government of paramount force, it appears from the cases that the courts are free to treat the acts of such *de facto* governments, or states, as voidable, if not void.<sup>40</sup> The status of the acts of a *de facto* government, with which relations have been severed, does not appear from an examination of the cases.<sup>41</sup>

Internationally, the distinction between a government *de jure* or *de facto* is material. The recognizant state may, by *de facto* recognition, enter into relations with the recognized state without affirming the legality of the recognized government. This recognition "by no means implies the recognition of such head as the legitimate head of that state."<sup>42</sup> *De facto* recognition is not an acknowledgment of legal equality. It is rather a formal acceptance and acknowledgment of the existence of certain facts, of which, in its external relations, the recognizant state must be aware.<sup>43</sup>

<sup>39</sup> *Thorington vs. Smith*, 8 Wallace, 1869, 1 at 9.

<sup>40</sup> *Sokoloff vs. National City Bank*, 239 N. Y., 1924, 158; *Banque Internationale vs. Goukassow*, 1923, L. R. 2 K. B. 680; *Cia. Minera Ygnacio Rodriguez Ramos, S. A. vs. Bartlesville Zinc Co.*, 275 S. W., 1925, 388.

<sup>41</sup> It does not appear that any cases involving such a point have come before either the English or the American courts. It is conceivable that the point might be raised in the English courts since the severance by England of relations with the Soviet Republic.

<sup>42</sup> Oppenheim, *International Law*, v. I, sec. 342, p. 528.

<sup>43</sup> *Ibid.*



The majority of states have come into existence by severing relations with a mother state. Recognition of the child state is not incompatible with recognition of the mother state. Lawrence points out that such recognition of the new state is considered "a normal act, quite compatible with the maintenance of peaceful intercourse with the mother country."<sup>44</sup> Obviously such would not be true if the new state had not actually severed relations with the mother state and maintained a separate existence. Such action is necessary in order that the new state establish itself as a fact to be dealt with in international life.

Should a proposed state attempt to establish a separate existence, and prior to the consummation of such independence third states should accord it complete recognition, such recognition would be considered as an affront to the parent state. It might be regarded as an act of intervention and could be resented with force by the parent state.<sup>45</sup> This renders it necessary to inquire as to which arm of the government is charged with the power of recognition, and to know exactly how the power may be exercised.

Is the power vested in the central government alone, or is it divided? May it, under appropriate circumstances, be exercised by the local or provincial governments? Is there any prescribed form which must be followed? What are the methods by which recognition is accorded? To what department of the government does the function belong? Can there be such a thing as recognition by the judicial department? Is recognition necessarily executive in nature? These points will be touched upon in the sections which follow. The chief consideration will be given to the United States.

In the United States the control of foreign affairs is vested in the national government, and not in the several states.

---

<sup>44</sup> *Principles of International Law*, p. 88.

<sup>45</sup> Hall, *International Law*, 83; Moore, *Digest*, v. I, 73.

"The United States is a national government, and the only government in this country that has the character of nationality."<sup>46</sup> National matters are entrusted to the government of the Union. "For local interests the several States of the Union exist, but for national purposes, embracing our relations with foreign nations, we are but one people, one nation, one power."

Such an arrangement is not universal, although some publicists argue that it is. But their argument is not in accord with the facts. The German States, prior to 1914, possessed the rights of legation, and under certain circumstances exercised treaty-making powers. They have lost these under the new constitution of 1919.<sup>47</sup>

Judged by the practice of the United States recognition may take place in several ways. In the first place, recognition may be accorded by entering into a treaty for the express purpose. It may be granted by the insertion of such a stipulation in a treaty negotiated for other purposes. If circumstances do not compel the negotiation of a convention, it may be implied from the despatch of diplomatic agents: re-

---

<sup>46</sup> Mr. Justice Bradley, in *Knox vs. Lee, Parker vs. Davis*, more commonly referred to as the *Legal Tender Cases*, 12 Wallace, 1870, 457 at 555. The doctrine so long contended for, that the Federal Union is a mere compact of Sovereign States, "should be regarded as definitely and forever overthrown." A similar view had been expressed by Mr. Chief Justice Marshall fifty years earlier in *Cohens vs. Virginia*, 6 Wheaton, 1821, 264. The noted Chief Justice said: "In war, we are one people. In making peace we are one people. In our commercial regulations, we are one and the same people. In many other respects, the American people are one; and the government which is alone capable of controlling and managing their interests in all these respects, is the government of the Union. It is their government, and in that character they have no other," p. 413. He referred to the states as "constituent parts of one great empire." Mr. Justice Bradley stated that the national government "is invested with power over all the foreign relations of the country, war, peace, and negotiations and intercourse with other nations; all of which are forbidden to the state governments." Later in his opinion he said that "the judiciary has jurisdiction to decide controversies between the states . . . and the government is clothed with power . . . to protect each of them against invasion and domestic violence," op. cit., 555. See also Mr. Justice Field's exhaustive opinion in *Chae Chan Ping vs. United States*, 130 U. S., 1889, 581.

<sup>47</sup> Brunet, *New German Constitution*, 1922, pp. 307-315. Also articles 45 and 78 of the German Constitution, reproduced in McBain and Rogers, *New Governments of Europe*, pp. 185 and 191.

lations which are considered to exist only between independent states.

It is a moot question whether the mere appointment of consuls implies recognition. The authorities are not agreed.<sup>48</sup> Moore has examined the practice in this regard,<sup>49</sup> and it appears from his examination that disagreement turns upon the issuance of the *exequatur*. The issuance of an *exequatur* implies recognition, whereas the mere appointment of consuls does not.<sup>50</sup> Moore, in his *Digest*, points out that the United States recognized several of the Latin American republics by this method. In summary, it may be said that any act which shows a disposition or intent on the part of the recognizant state to treat a new state or government as an International Person may be considered as an act of recognition.

A far more mooted question than the method of recognition, is that of the exercise of the function.<sup>51</sup> To what department of the National Government does the function belong? The constitution of the United States is silent on the point. It does not, by express terms, confer the power upon any one branch of the government.

However, the power vests by implication with the executive branch. The constitution<sup>52</sup> provides that the "executive power shall be vested in a President of the United States." The powers of the President, not being enumerated, are considered to be such powers as naturally inhere in the chief executive of a state. This includes the power of recognition. It is true that certain powers are enumerated,

---

<sup>48</sup> Oppenheim, *International Law*, v. I, p. 596, is firmly convinced that such appointment implies recognition, while Hall, *International Law*, p. 109, is equally certain that such an act does not accord recognition.

<sup>49</sup> *Digest*, v. I, pp. 79, 90, 206.

<sup>50</sup> In 1832, the United States afforded recognition to Belgium through the issuance of *exequaturs*. Similarly, we recognized Venezuela, Uruguay, Guatemala and the Dominican Republic. U. S. *Senate Document*, No. 40, *op. cit.*, pp. 6-13.

<sup>51</sup> See Julius Goebel, Jr., *Recognition Policy of the United States*, pp. 44-68, for an excellent philosophical treatise on the theory of recognition.

<sup>52</sup> Article II, sec. 2, cl. 2.

but this enumeration is indicative of the nature of the powers, rather than all-inclusive.<sup>53</sup> Historically and judicially recognition has been and is considered as an executive function.<sup>54</sup>

Yet it is not necessary to resort to implication alone. In the recital of some of the presidential powers, the constitution provides that he "shall have power, by and with the advice and consent of the Senate, to make treaties, provided two-thirds of the senators present concur; and he shall nominate and by the advice and consent of the Senate shall appoint, ambassadors, other public ministers and consuls. . . ." <sup>55</sup> Thus recognition through the negotiation of a treaty or the appointment of a diplomatic or consular officer vests in the President. Certainly we may say that the initiative rests with him.

Further enumeration confers on the President the power to "receive ambassadors and other public ministers." <sup>56</sup> The reception of diplomatic agents vests in the President alone. It follows that recognition through the reception of diplomatic agents is an executive function. This method of recognition was inaugurated by President Washington in the reception of M. Genêt, May 17, 1793, as the Minister of the French Republic.<sup>57</sup> This method was followed in the recognition of Columbia, Brazil, and the Central American Federation of 1825. It was also used by the United States in the cases of Costa Rica, Nicaragua, and Panama.<sup>58</sup> It is the usual method of according recognition.

---

<sup>53</sup> Corwin, *President's Control of Foreign Relations*, *passim*. See also Matthews, *Conduct of American Foreign Relations*, *passim*.

<sup>54</sup> *Recognition of a New State: Is it an Executive Function?*, W. L. Penfield, 32 *Amer. Law Rev.* 1898, pp. 390-408, where the author goes into minute examination of the authorities such as Montesquieu, Blackstone, and the Constitutional Debates, in order to determine whether, at the time the Constitution was formed, the conduct of foreign relations was regarded by the framers as properly belonging to the Executive, and whether the conduct of such relations is implicit in the grant of executive powers to the President.

<sup>55</sup> Art. II, sec. 2.

<sup>56</sup> *Ibid.*, sec. 3.

<sup>57</sup> Jefferson's *Writings*, Ford Edition, v. VI, p. 217.

<sup>58</sup> U. S. *Senate Document*, No. 40, *op. cit.*, pp. 1-12.



The constitutional phrase "to receive ambassadors and other public ministers" means exactly what it says. It should not be interpreted in a narrow sense. It should be interpreted to include "all possible diplomatic agents, which any power may accredit to the United States."<sup>59</sup> Professor Corwin feels that the term "public ministers" includes "all foreign consular agents" as well as "diplomatic agents."<sup>60</sup>

In cases of recognition by the reception of diplomatic and consular officers, the president acts alone. Not so with the despatch of such agents to a foreign government. Here the constitution requires that another arm of the government, the Senate, be brought into play. Yet in this method the initiative remains with the Chief Executive. Until the President makes the nomination, the Senate can take no action.<sup>61</sup>

Also, in the granting of recognition by the negotiation of treaties the Senate has a share, inasmuch as their ratification requires the consent of that body. But here, as in the case of the despatch of diplomatic and consular officers, the initial step must be taken by the President. The President alone is responsible for the conduct of negotiations. Neither the constitution nor practice requires that he submit the names of commissioners to negotiate treaties to the Senate for confirmation. They are agents of the Chief Executive rather than "officers of the United states."<sup>62</sup> President Washington conferred with the Senate relative to the negotiation of certain treaties. He requested the confirmation of his appointees for that purpose. The arrangement prevailed as late as 1815. However, if we may judge by the experiences of Washington, Adams, and Jefferson, the arrangement was unsatisfactory.

<sup>59</sup> Opinion of Attorney-General Cushing, *Opinions of the Attorney-Generals*, v. 7, p. 209.

<sup>60</sup> *President's Control of Foreign Relations*, p. 46.

<sup>61</sup> For illustrations of this method of recognition in the cases of Bolivia, Haiti, Honduras, and Peru, see U. S. *Senate Document*, No. 40, *op. cit.*, pp. 4-13.

<sup>62</sup> Crandall, *Treaties: their Making and Enforcement*, pp. 75-76.

Since 1815 the practice has been otherwise. Only in exceptional cases have the names of such commissioners been submitted to the Senate for confirmation.<sup>63</sup> By this method the President is able to extend recognition on his own authority to an independent state by merely entering into treaty negotiations with such a power. This method was used in 1826 in according recognition to the government of Hawaii. A special representative was sent by the President to negotiate a treaty with the King of Hawaii. Similar recognition was subsequently accorded to the provisional Hawaiian government in 1893 through the negotiation of an annexation treaty. This method has been followed in the recognition of other states and governments.<sup>64</sup>

Once a state is recognized, subsequent governments within the state are generally recognized by the issuance of *Letters of Credence* to the diplomatic representative accorded to the prior government. These letters are issued by the President. Thus the President has it within his power to determine the legitimacy of a new government. He may determine the proper time to extend recognition. Nowhere are these principles more perspicuously illustrated than in our relations with France from 1793 to 1870.<sup>65</sup> Perhaps the most recent example of this method was the late recognition accorded to the Provisional Government in Russia. On March 22, 1917, Ambassador Francis,<sup>66</sup> in an address to the Council of Ministers, stated that he had the honor, as the Ambassador and Representative of the Government of the United States accredited to Russia, to say that the Government of the United States had recognized the new Government of Russia, and that he would "be pleased to continue intercourse with Russia through the medium of the new government."<sup>67</sup>

<sup>63</sup> Hyde, v. II, pp. 12-13 and authorities there cited.

<sup>64</sup> U. S. Senate Document, No. 40, *op. cit.*, pp. 1-12.

<sup>65</sup> Goebel, *Recognition Policy of the United States*, chapter 4, pp. 97-115.

<sup>66</sup> The United States' Ambassador accredited to the former Czar's government.

<sup>67</sup> *New York Times*, *Current History Magazine*, v. I, p. 293.



In addition to the aforementioned powers, the President is, by the constitution, made commander-in-chief of the armed forces of the country.<sup>68</sup> It appears that recognition has been granted in several instances through the use of this power. This was done as a matter of military and political strategy.<sup>69</sup> It was by virtue of this authority that President Wilson accorded recognition to Czecho-Slovakia during the World War. On September 2, 1918, Secretary Lansing, issued a statement which declared, *inter alia*, that the Government of the United States recognized a state of belligerency "between the Czecho-Slovaks . . . and the German and Austro-Hungarian Empires." It also recognized the Czecho-Slovak National Council as a *de facto* belligerent government, "clothed with proper authority to direct the military and political affairs of the Czecho-Slovaks." The Government of the United States further declared that it was prepared "to enter formally into relations with the *de facto* government thus recognized for the purpose of prosecuting the war against the common enemy, the Empires of Germany and Austro-Hungary."<sup>70</sup> Recognition of Poland<sup>71</sup> and Jugo-Slavia<sup>72</sup> was accorded in a similar manner.

Practice, the mother of things diplomatic, reveals recognition as the function of the Chief Executive. The President, acting alone, may accord recognition of a state of insurgency, of belligerency, or of independence. He is authorized by the constitution to grant such recognition by any of the forms known to International Law, except in the form of a treaty or by accrediting a representative to such new state.<sup>73</sup>

<sup>68</sup> Art. II, sec. 2.

<sup>69</sup> Comment, 12 *American Political Science Review*, p. 715.

<sup>70</sup> *Official Bulletin of the United States*, Sept. 3, 1918.

<sup>71</sup> January 26, 1919.

<sup>72</sup> February 7, 1919; *Political Science Review*, Supplement No. 70, September, 1919.

<sup>73</sup> Corwin, *President's Control of Foreign Relations*, p. 71. This means two-thirds of a quorum and not two-thirds of the elected members. A weighty opinion on a similar point was delivered by Mr. Chief Justice White in *Missouri Pacific Railway Co. vs. Kansas*, 248 U. S., 1919, 276.

This does not mean that the Senate, or even Congress, has not claimed the function as one of its own. Indeed some senators have declared that "recognition by this government of any people as a free and independent nation is one exclusively for the determination of Congress in its capacity as the law-making power" and that "this prerogative does not appertain to the Executive except so far as the President is, under the Constitution, by the exercise of the veto, made a part of the law-making power of the government."<sup>74</sup>

Usually, however, the Senate is not aggressive. Yet in at least five instances they have sought to influence the recognition policy of the Chief Executive.<sup>75</sup> In general, however, the President has accorded little, if any, weight to their recommendations. Recognition is primarily the function of the President.

In summary we find that recognition is the acknowledgment of the existence of a state or government by other states or governments. State life is a condition precedent to the extension of recognition. Recognition does not create the state. However recognition is necessary before a state or government can assert its fundamental rights of existence and independence. Such has been the development of the Family of Nations. Recognition may be *de jure* or *de facto*. Internationally the difference is important, but so far as the courts of the recognizant state are concerned, it is of little moment. In the United States the recognition function is vested in the national government by virtue of its complete control of foreign affairs. It is placed in the hands of the Executive Department where it logically belongs.

---

<sup>74</sup> Resolution introduced by Senator Bacon of Georgia, 1898, and reported in 32 *American Law Review*, 1898, 390.

<sup>75</sup> The Latin American republics, Texas, Mexico, Cuba and Russia. A brief summary is given by G. S. Moyer in his *Attitude of the United States toward the Recognition of the Soviet Republic*, especially pages 133-140 on Congressional attitude. A more detailed statement of Congressional interference will be found in Moore, *Digest*, v. I, sections 35, 36, and 37. The best discussion of the Russian situation is to be found in Ernest La Garde's, *La Reconnaissance du Gouvernement Des Soviets*. See also *Die de facto-Regierung im Volkerrecht*, von J. Spiropoulos.

## CHAPTER III

## RECOGNITION BY THE POLITICAL DEPARTMENTS

A difficult situation faces any court which is called upon to determine the validity of an act done under the authority of a foreign state. This has been especially true in the United States and England in controversies before the courts involving the legality of acts performed under the authority of the unrecognized Soviet regime. The cases on this point fall into two general classes. First, those in which the political departments of the recognizant state have assumed a definite attitude toward the government in question. Second, those in which no definite position has been taken. This chapter is devoted to a consideration of those cases in which a definite attitude has been assumed by the legislative or the executive branches of the recognizant state.

In those cases involving a fixed attitude on the part of the political departments two factors have proved important. These have been the nature of the position, that is whether recognition has been expressly or impliedly granted or denied, and the time of the recognition, that is whether recognition antedated the act the validity of which is in litigation, or was granted subsequent to the commission of the acts in question but prior to the adjudication of the court.

Where recognition of belligerency, insurgency or independence has been accorded by the political departments prior to, or at the time the controversies have arisen, the courts have regarded such determination as binding upon the judiciary. They have consistently refused to enter into an examination to determine for themselves which government is the lawfully instituted authority in a designated state. Also,

in cases where the political departments have positively refused to accord recognition the courts have regarded themselves as bound by such determination. They have refused to question the wisdom of the action of the political departments, or to put themselves at variance with their determination.

In those cases in which recognition has been granted between the time of the act in question and the time of the litigation, the courts have created the fiction of retroactivity; under what conditions and with what results will be seen when the question is examined in a later chapter.

With reference to those cases in which no position, either affirmative or negative, has been assumed by the political departments, but where it is a matter of world notoriety that a change has taken place, such as in Russia, the decisions are not uniform. Some of the courts have felt that they were bound to regard the old order of things as continuing until cognizance of the change was taken by the political departments, while other courts have felt that they were competent to judge the situation in question and independently to determine the status of the state. The succeeding chapter will be devoted to a consideration of this class of cases.

The writer feels that the above distinctions are warranted from an examination of the cases, although conscious that neither the courts, the lawyers, nor those few who have dared to write upon the subject, have always observed such a differentiation. While it may be said that conflicting expressions are to be found in some of the decisions, the writer defends the position that they are excerpts and not decisions, and that when the so-called conflicting expressions are considered with reference to the concrete facts of each case, keeping in mind the nature of the judicial function, they are entirely in harmony with and support the general classification as made.

Practically all of the recent cases rely upon the early pre-



cedents. These flowed from the political turnovers revolving around the French Revolution, the revolution in Santo Domingo and Haiti, the severance by the Latin American republics of relations with Spain and Portugal, and our own Civil War. Such precedents have exerted a profound influence upon the recent development of the judicial doctrine. It will be necessary to scrutinize the early decisions most carefully.

The first case in point presented to the American courts was *Clark vs. United States*. This case arose out of the non-importation act of 1809 and was decided in the circuit court.<sup>1</sup> The act in question forbade the importation of

<sup>1</sup> 3 Wash. C. C. 101, Federal Case No. 2, 838. The courts have regarded the determination of an attitude as a political question. On such questions the courts follow the political departments of the government. The following have been held to be political questions: the recognition of a government, *The Neredie*, 9 Cranch, 1815, 388; recognition of diplomatic and consular representatives, *The Rogdai*, 279 Federal, 1920, 130; recognition of belligerency, *The Itata*, 56 Federal, 1893, 505; recognition of insurgency, *United States vs. Three Friends*, 166 U. S., 1897, 1, see also 11 A. J., 883, where an attempt was made before a Wisconsin Circuit Court to enjoin the shipment of arms to the allies during the world war; the status of an Indian tribe, *Cherokee Nation vs. Georgia*, 5 Peters, 1831, 1 and *United States vs. Holliday*, 3 Wallace, 1865, 407; *in re* the status of Indian tribes see also, *United States vs. Boyd*, 68 Federal, 1895, 577, where the court said: "In determining the attitude of the government toward the Indians,—all Indians,—the courts follow the action of the executive and other political departments of the government, whose more special duty it is to determine such affairs." The guaranty of a republican form of government, *Luther vs. Borden*, 7 Howard, 1849, 1 and *Texas vs. White*, 7 Wallace, 1868, 700; jurisdiction over territory, *Wilson vs. Shaw*, 204 U. S., 1907, 24, where the court rejected the argument that the executive branch had exceeded its power in acquiring the Panama Canal Zone; the admission and deportation of aliens, 2 *Corpus Juris* 1075, notes and cases there cited; the beginning of a war, *The Protector*, 12 Wallace, 1871, 700, and *United States vs. One Hundred and Twenty Nine Packages*, 1862, Federal Case No. 15, 941; the termination of a war, *United States vs. Wall*, 278 Federal, 1921, 838, *The Commercial Trust Co. vs. Miller*, 281 Federal, 1922, 804; but see *United States vs. Hicks*, 256 Federal, 1919, 707 where one circuit court construed the President's message to Congress, on the cessation of hostilities wherein he said "the war thus comes to an end," as evidence that the President regarded the war as ended; the negotiation of treaties, *Fellows vs. Blacksmith*, 19 Howard, 1856, 366; the violation of a treaty, *Ware vs. Hylton*, 3 Dallas, 1796, 260, wherein Mr. Justice Iredell said: "These are considerations of policy, considerations of extreme magnitude, and certainly incompetent to the examination and decision of a court of Justice"; and the termination of treaties, *Terlinden vs. Ames*, 184 U. S., 1901, 270, which involved an interpretation of our extradition treaty of 1854 with Prussia.

goods into the United States "from any port or place situated in France, or its colonies or dependencies." The goods in question in this case had been imported from Santo Domingo, a former French Colony which, at the time, was under the control of revolutionists. In the prosecution it became important to know whether Santo Domingo was to be considered as a colony within the meaning of the non-importation statute. Clark defended that the *de facto* independence of Santo Domingo took the acts in question from under the statute, but the court adopted the opposite view. Mr. Justice Washington, who delivered the opinion, said, with reference to Clark's defense: "These arguments . . . had great weight with us. . . . But they seem to be so completely borne down by the opinion of the Supreme Court, pronounced in the case of *Rose vs. Himely*, that it is impossible, we think, to sustain them, without disregarding principles most clearly expressed in that opinion."<sup>2</sup>

This leads one to inquire as to the "principles most clearly expressed" in *Rose vs. Himely*.<sup>3</sup> An American vessel had also taken cargo at ports in control of the insurgents in Santo Domingo. Subsequently, it was seized on the high seas and carried into a Spanish port in Cuba where both the vessel and cargo were condemned and sold under the authority of a purported agent of the French government of Santo Domingo. Afterwards the goods were brought to the United States where they were claimed by the original American owner, but prior to the trial both the vessel and the cargo were condemned by a French court in Santo Domingo on the ground that the vessel had violated a French decree prohibiting trade with the insurgents.

On appeal to the Supreme Court Mr. Chief Justice Marshall sought to determine whether the sentence of the French tribunal was that of a prize court or a court enforcing a

---

<sup>2</sup> *Clark vs. United States*, Federal case No. 2,838, 3 Wash. C. C. 101 at 102.

<sup>3</sup> 4 Cranch, 1808, 241.



municipal regulation. He felt that it was necessary to determine this in order better to determine the jurisdiction of the French tribunal.<sup>4</sup> He proceeded to examine the acts and decrees of the French government in order to determine the exact nature of the judgment. He concluded that the vessel and cargo had been condemned for violation of the French municipal regulation. Inasmuch as the vessel had been seized on the high sea and never carried within the jurisdiction of the court, the learned Chief Justice held that the condemnation by the French court was ineffective and gave judgment in favor of the American claimants.

The attorneys had argued that the court should not stop there. They had argued that Santo Domingo, "having declared itself a sovereign state, and having maintained its sovereignty . . . by arms, must be considered and treated by" the courts of the United States "as sovereign in fact, and as being entitled to maintain the same intercourse with the world that is maintained by other belligerent nations." It was in answer to this contention that Mr. Chief Justice Marshall said that "it is for governments to decide whether they will consider Santo Domingo as an independent nation."<sup>5</sup> No cases are cited on the point. The only reference made is to Vattel on what he deemed the law to be. "But the language of that writer," said Marshall, "is obviously addressed to sovereigns, not to courts."

Examination of *Rose vs. Himely* reveals that Mr. Chief Justice Marshall's statement was obiter dictum. It appears to have been only a passing comment on the argument of the attorneys. However, it was considered the ruling principle in *Clark vs. United States* and subsequent cases.<sup>6</sup>

<sup>4</sup> "In making this inquiry the relative situation of France and Santo Domingo must necessarily be considered. The colony of Santo Domingo, originally belonging to France, had broken the bond which connected her with the parent state, had declared herself independent, and was endeavoring to support that independence by arms. France still asserted her claim of sovereignty, and had employed a military force in support of that claim. A war *de facto* then unquestionably existed between France and Santo Domingo." 4 Cranch, 1808, 241 at 272.

<sup>5</sup> *Ibid.* at 272.

<sup>6</sup> *Rose vs. Himely* was modified, if not reversed, in *Hudson vs. Guestier*, 4 Cranch, 1808, 293, and 6 Cranch, 1810, 281.

Nevertheless, Mr. Justice Washington had good reason for adopting the position which he assumed in *Clark vs. United States*, although Marshall's dictum did not apply. The non-importation act expressly stipulated that it should apply to French "colonies and dependencies." France still claimed Santo Domingo as a possession. Prior and subsequent events showed that her claim was recognized by the United States. The political departments of our government had dealt with the French government as having authority over the colony in question. It would have embarrassed the political departments for the court to have permitted the "*de facto* situation to take Santo Domingo out of the operation of the statute." The true reason back of the court's decision appears to have been the assumption of a fixed attitude on the part of the political departments, rather than reverent regard for the dictum in *Rose vs. Himely*.

The exact issue was first presented to the United States Supreme Court for determination in 1818 in *Gelston vs. Hoyt*.<sup>7</sup> The case arose out of an act of 1794<sup>8</sup> which imposed a forfeiture of any ship fitted out with the intent that it be employed "in the service of any foreign prince or state," to commit hostilities upon the subjects or property of "another foreign prince or state" with whom the United States were at peace. The Collector of Customs of New York had seized the vessel in question, on the ground that it was being used in violation of the neutrality laws of the United States.

The plaintiffs brought action to recover the vessel. They contended that the neutrality laws had not been violated inasmuch as the vessel was fitted out for the use of that part of Santo Domingo under the *de facto* control of *Petion*, against that part of Santo Domingo under the *de facto* control of *Christophe*, which, being unrecognized, were not

---

<sup>7</sup> 3 Wheaton, 1818, 246.

<sup>8</sup> Ch. 50, Sec. 3.

foreign states or princes, within the meaning of the neutrality laws. The defendants, public officers, had offered to prove the *de facto* status of the *Petion* government, but the evidence was rejected by the lower court. The Supreme Court held that it was properly rejected.

"If the court was bound to admit the evidence . . . it must have been upon the ground that it was bound to take judicial notice of the relations of the country with foreign states, and to decide affirmatively, that *Petion* and *Christophe* were foreign princes, within the purview of the statute." Mr. Justice Story added: "No doctrine is better established than that it belongs exclusively to governments to recognize new states in the revolutions which occur in the world." The Justice felt that "until such recognition, either by our own government or the government to which the new state belonged, courts of justice . . . are bound to consider the ancient state of things as remaining unaltered."<sup>9</sup> Express reference is made to *Rose vs. Himely*, 4 Cranch 241.<sup>10</sup>

The cases cited in *Gelston vs. Hoyt* appear to sustain the decision more than in *Clark vs. United States*. The Act of 1794 expressly stated that it should apply only where a "foreign prince or state" was involved. If the court had acknowledged either the *Petion* government or the *Christophe* government as a "foreign prince or state" it would have put them at variance with Congress which anticipated that the Act of 1794 should apply only to recognized governments.

At the same session of the court, fifteen days later, Mr. Chief Justice Marshall had occasion to comment on the delicacy and difficulty of this question. In the course of his argument to the court in *United States vs. Palmer*,<sup>11</sup> one

<sup>9</sup> *Gelston vs. Hoyt*, 3 Wheaton, 1818, 246 at 324.

<sup>10</sup> See also, *In the Manila*, 1 Edwards, 1808, 1, 165 English Reprints, 1011; *City of Berne vs. Bank of England*, 9 Ves. Jun., 1804, 347, 32 English Reprints, 636; *Dolder vs. Bank of England*, 10 Ves. Jun., 1804, 284, 32 English Reprints, 853; *ibid.*, 10 Ves. Jun., 1804, 352, 32 English Reprints, 881; *ibid.*, 11 Ves. Jun., 1805, 283, 32 English Reprints, 1097.

<sup>11</sup> 3 Wheaton, 1818, 610.

Blake had insisted, on this point, that "nothing but the most explicit, public and notorious acts of the government should be noticed by courts of justice. Nothing should be left to inference or conjecture; because, such a course might lead to a usurpation by the courts of the high prerogative of making war and peace, and the whole nation would become responsible to other nations for the error of judgment in a department with which it had not entrusted the care of its foreign affairs. In the infinite variety and complication of these affairs, the language and conduct of the executive may be misunderstood; and, therefore, nothing short of an act of the whole legislature, a treaty, a proclamation of the President, or the public reception of an ambassador from the new state, ought to be considered as a recognition of its independence."<sup>12</sup>

The court did not concur in the argument. The Chief Justice "observed that such questions are generally rather political than legal in their character. They belong more properly to those who can declare what the law shall be; who can place the nation in such a position with respect to foreign powers as to their own judgment shall appear wise; to whom are entrusted all its foreign relations; than to that tribunal whose power as well as duty is confined to the application of the rule which the legislature may prescribe for it."

In the war between France and Santo Domingo, the United States could have engaged itself with the one party or the other, or observed absolute neutrality, or recognized the new state absolutely, or else have made a limited recognition of it. But if the United States remained neutral, as it did, and recognized the existence of a civil war, "its courts cannot consider as criminal those acts of hostility which war authorizes, and which the new government may direct against its enemy. To decide otherwise, would be to determine that the war prosecuted by one of the parties was unlawful, and would be to arraign the nation to which the court belongs

---

<sup>12</sup> 3 Wheaton, 1818, 610 at pp. 623-625.



against that party. This would transcend the limits prescribed to the judicial department.”<sup>13</sup> The courts of the Union must view newly constituted governments “as they are viewed by the legislative and executive department of the government.”<sup>14</sup> For the first time the court intimates that recognition is a legislative, as well as an executive, function.

Again, the President had adopted a course, neutrality, and the courts felt bound by the decision of the Executive. The court observed that a different course might have been taken by the Executive, but that the judiciary must follow once a decision had been made.

Mr. Justice Johnson, in *United States vs. Palmer*,<sup>15</sup> agreed with the majority of the court, but insisted upon writing a separate opinion. The following year, while on circuit duty, the precise question was raised before him in *The Consul of Spain vs. La Concepcion*.<sup>16</sup> A Spanish owned vessel was seized by a cruiser of the revolted provinces of Buenos Ayres. When it was brought into an American port the owners libelled it, and the District Court ordered restoration, *inter alia*, on the ground that the commission issued by the Buenos Ayres government, then unrecognized, could not be recognized as valid. On appeal to the Circuit Court, Justice Johnson reversed the determination of the District Court. He held that the commission issued to the cruiser could be recognized because of the existence of war, the acknowledgment of which had been made by the political departments of our government.

It was argued, and cases and opinions were cited to show,

---

<sup>13</sup> *U. S. vs. Palmer*, 3 Wheaton, 1818, 610, at 634-635. This was a prosecution for robbery committed on the high seas. The circuit court of the United States, for the District of Mass., was divided in opinion and certified ten questions to the Supreme Court, seven of which involved the rights of a colony or portion of an established empire which has proclaimed itself an independent nation, and was asserting and maintaining its claim to independence by arms.

<sup>14</sup> 3 Wheaton, 1818, 610 at 643.

<sup>15</sup> *Ibid.*

<sup>16</sup> Federal Cases No. 3,137, 2 Wheeler Cr. Case, 1819, 597.

that the Circuit Court could not recognize the independence of a revolted colony until full recognition had proceeded from our government. The court refused to agree entirely with the argument. On the point the court observed that "recognition by our own government, whatever be the state of fact, removes all question of doubt and our courts must consider the governments thus recognized as independent. . . ." <sup>17</sup> However, the court felt that there exist certain *de facto* situations of which cognizance must be taken by the courts in the course of adjudications.

Mr. Justice Johnson made certain observations which too often have been misunderstood and misconstrued by courts and writers who overlook the fact that this decision was reversed on appeal to the Supreme Court. New proofs were taken which showed that the vessel was originally built, equipped, manned and armed in the United States for a cruise against Spain, and that there had never been a bona fide sale at Buenos Ayres. Such evidence showed conclusively that the American neutrality laws had been violated. Therefore, it was unnecessary for the court to consider the point pressed before the District and Circuit Courts.

The court examined and reaffirmed the doctrine that recognition by the political departments binds the judiciary, the following year, 1819, when it was put in issue, in *The Divina Pastora*.<sup>18</sup> Mr. Chief Justice Marshall said: "The decision at the last term, (referring to *United States vs. Palmer*), establishes the principle, that the government of the United States, having recognized the existence of a civil war between Spain and her colonies, but remaining neutral, the courts of the Union are bound to consider as lawful those acts which war authorizes, and which the new governments in South America may direct against their enemy."<sup>19</sup>

---

<sup>17</sup> Federal Case No. No. 3, 137, 2 Wheeler Cr. Case, 1819, 597. 6 Federal Cases 360.

<sup>18</sup> 4 Wheaton, 1819, 52.

<sup>19</sup> *Ibid.*, pp. 63-64.



Ten years later, in an argument to the court, in answer to the proposition that the courts could examine political questions, one Jones<sup>20</sup> asserted that the principle is too obviously a necessary corollary of the connection of courts of justice with the government under which they are established, to require illustration. "This court," said he, referring to the Supreme Court, "is precluded from entertaining any other opinion, than that which has already been expressed by the government and all its citizens, except those few whose private interests induce them to cling to an exploded fallacy." This was the view taken by the court.<sup>21</sup>

Equally strong language issued from the court itself in *Charles L. Williams vs. Suffolk Insurance Company*.<sup>22</sup> The Suffolk Insurance Company had issued marine insurance policies on two vessels, the *Harriet* and the *Breakwater*, to sail on a sealing voyage, to the Southern hemisphere "with liberty . . . to touch at all islands, ports and places, for the purpose of taking seals, and for information and refreshments. . . ." <sup>23</sup> The *Harriet* had proceeded on its voyage when it was ordered by the government of Buenos Ayres not to catch seals off the Falkland Islands. The master of the vessel disregarded the orders. The vessel was seized and condemned under the authority of the government of Buenos Ayres.

In two actions of assumpsit, on the policies, the Suffolk Insurance Company defended that they were relieved of

---

<sup>20</sup> See *Foster vs. Neilson*, 2 Peters, 1829, 253 at 283.

<sup>21</sup> *Ibid.* 306-309 *passim*. The determination of a boundary line is a political question, the determination of which, by the political departments, the courts are bound to respect. *Foster vs. Neilson* 2 Peters, 1829, 253; *U. S. vs. Arredondo*, 6 Peters, 1832, 711; *Garcia vs. Lee*, 12 Peters, 1838, 511; *U. S. vs. Yorba*, 1 Wallace, 1863, 412 at 423; *U. S. Lynde*, 11 Wallace, 1870, 632 at 638. In the last case the court says that it is not aware of any case in which the principle has been doubted by the courts. However, expressions may perhaps be found in some opinions, which, "detached from the case under consideration, might create some doubt on the subject. But these expressions must always be taken with reference to the particular subject matter in the mind of the court." *Garcia vs. Lee*, 12 Peters, 1838, 511 at 520.

<sup>22</sup> 13 Peters, 1839, 415.

<sup>23</sup> 14 *Transcript of the Record*, United States Supreme Court, 1050.

liability inasmuch as the master of the *Harriet* had disregarded the orders of the Buenos Ayres government. The plaintiffs responded that they were not bound by the orders of the Buenos Ayres government, because it had no jurisdiction over the Falkland Islands; the government of the United States not having acknowledged, but having expressly denied its claims. The defendants replied that the islands were the property of the Buenos Ayres government and contended that the court should determine for itself whether such were the facts of the case.

When the case came before Mr. Justice Story in the Circuit Court,<sup>24</sup> he recognized that the American government "insists that the Falkland Islands do not constitute any part of the dominions within the sovereignty of Buenos Ayres," while Buenos Ayres maintained exactly the opposite position. Mr. Justice Story said that "in this state of the diplomacy between the two countries . . . the question is whether it is competent for this court to reexamine and decide . . . and thus to interpose its positive umpirage to settle the matters in dispute . . . ." <sup>25</sup> He answered his question by saying that the court was "bound up by the doctrines and claims insisted on by its own government, and that it must take them to be rightful, until the contrary" was established by some formal and authorized action of that government.<sup>26</sup> He said: "This court is bound, so far as its own functions are concerned, to act upon the ground that the claims of our government, and its assertions of its rights in this respect, are correct. *Omnia rita acta.*" <sup>27</sup>

The court regarded the argument as more than the rejection of an exploded theory. It was regarded as a basic principle underlying our governmental structure for "it might otherwise happen that the extra-ordinary spectacle

---

<sup>24</sup> Federal Case No. 17,738, 1838; 29 Federal Cases, p. 1402; 3 Sumner 270.

<sup>25</sup> *Ibid.*, p. 1403.

<sup>26</sup> *Ibid.*, p. 1404.

<sup>27</sup> *Ibid.*

might be presented of the courts of a country disavowing and annulling the acts of its own government in matters of state and political diplomacy.”<sup>28</sup>

On appeal to the Supreme Court, Mr. Justice McLean expressed surprise that there should have been any doubt on the point.<sup>29</sup> He stressed the point that it is not within the province of the courts to pass upon the wisdom of the action of the Chief Executive. “It is enough to know, that in the exercise of his constitutional functions, he has decided the question. Having done this under the responsibilities which belong to him, it is obligatory on the people and government of the Union.” And, the court ordered its decision to be certified back to the Circuit Court: “That, inasmuch as the American Government has insisted and does still insist, through its regular executive authority, that the Falkland Islands do not constitute any part of the dominions within the sovereignty of the government of Buenos Ayres, the action of the American Government on this subject is conclusive on the said Circuit Court.”<sup>30</sup>

The court decided that the vessel was not bound to abandon the voyage, under the threat of illegal capture. It held that the insurers were liable to pay for the loss of the vessel and cargo, inasmuch as the master of the vessel in refusing to obey the orders to leave the islands, had acted under a belief that he was bound so to do, as a matter of duty to the owners, and all interested in the voyage, and “in vindication of the right claimed by the American Government.”<sup>31</sup>

It has been argued that this part of *Williams vs. Suffolk Insurance Company* was *obiter dictum*; that the court did not have to decide between conflicting claims of the right of recognition by the two departments of government. Such

<sup>28</sup> 14 *Transcript of the Record*, United States Supreme Court Reports, 1052.

<sup>29</sup> 13 Peters, 1839, 415.

<sup>30</sup> *Williams vs. Suffolk Insurance Company*, 13 Peters, 1839, 415 at pp. 419-420.

<sup>31</sup> *Ibid.*, 421.

may be true, but it does not abrogate the fact that the court had to decide whether the seizure was valid in order to determine liability. The alleged ground of invalidity was the act of the President recognizing the independence of Buenos Ayres while at the same time expressly denying its sovereignty over the Falkland Islands. Under these circumstances the court held that the Falkland Islands must be deemed to belong to Spain until the title of Buenos Ayres had been admitted by our government. It determined liability accordingly. The court felt bound by the determination of the Chief Executive, and resolved to abide by such determination until it should be changed by the President.

The decision came under review by the Supreme Court in *Jones vs. United States*.<sup>32</sup> By an act of Congress of 1856, the President had been authorized to extend, by proclamation, the jurisdiction of the United States over any unoccupied island having a deposit of phosphate, or guano, which might be discovered and occupied by any citizen of the United States, the usual rules of International Law governing discovery having been complied with. The United States acquired jurisdiction over the Navassa Island by virtue of such discovery and occupation. Jones had been convicted of the murder of one Foster on Navassa Island. On appeal he raised a question as to the jurisdiction of the court, but the Supreme Court affirmed the conviction.

Mr. Justice Gray, who delivered the opinion of the court, said that who is the sovereign, *de jure* or *de facto*, of a territory is not a judicial, but a political question, the determination of which by the legislative and executive departments of any government "conclusively binds the judges, as well as all other officers, citizens and subjects of that government." Then he added: "This principle has always been upheld by this court, and has been affirmed under a great variety of circumstances."<sup>33</sup>

<sup>32</sup> 137 U. S., 1890, 202.

<sup>33</sup> *Ibid.*, 212.



The court held that it was bound to take judicial notice of the recognition or denial of the sovereignty of a foreign power by the government whose laws it administers. Such notice could be had from the acts of the legislature and executive, "even though those acts were not formally put in evidence, nor in accord with the pleadings."<sup>34</sup>

After having stated the above premise, the court noted that in the ascertainment of facts of which the court was bound to take judicial notice, the judges may refresh their memory and inform their conscience from such sources as they deem most trustworthy.<sup>35</sup> As to international affairs, such as the recognition of a foreign government, or of the diplomatic character of a person claiming to be its representative, they may inquire of the Foreign Office or the Department of State.<sup>36</sup>

In the instant case the court proceeded to examine the acts of Congress, the documents on file in the State Department, and the proclamations of the President. In these official instruments and documents Navassa Island had been regarded as a part of the United States. The United States had jurisdiction over it for purposes of enforcement of the law in question.<sup>37</sup> The case is unique in that it did not in-

---

<sup>34</sup> *U. S. vs. Reynes*, 9 Howard, 1850, 127; *Kennett vs. Chambers*, 14 Howard, 1852, 38; *Hoyt vs. Russell*, 117 U. S., 1885, 401; *Coffee vs. Grover*, 123 U. S., 1887, 1; *State vs. Dunwell*, 3 R. I., 1855, 127; *State vs. Wagner*, 61 Maine 1873, 178. In *Coffee vs. Grover*, involving conflicting titles to land, where the title depended upon a disputed boundary between Georgia and Florida, the court determined the true boundary by consulting public documents, some of which had not been given in evidence at the trial, nor referred to in the opinion of the Supreme Court of Florida.

<sup>35</sup> *Fremont vs. U. S.*, 17 Howard, 1854, 542 at 557; *Brown vs. Piper*, 91 U. S., 1875, 37.

<sup>36</sup> *Ex parte Hitz*, 111 U. S., 1883, 766, where the court made inquiry of the State Department to determine the relations of a Mr. Hitz as Political Agent of the Swiss Confederation. See also *In Re Baiz*, 135 U. S., 1890, 403, where the question was raised, in 1890, regarding status of three Central American countries.

<sup>37</sup> *Jones vs. United States*, 137 U. S., 1890, 202. The court gave special attention to the memorial sworn to by Peter Duncan, the discoverer of the island, on Nov. 18, 1857 and to the Proclamation of the Secretary of State of December 8, 1859, and other papers of intermediate dates filed in the Department of State. These had been communicated by the President to the Senate on April 12, 1860. *Ibid.*, 217-224.



volve a state of belligerency, insurgency, or independence. The sole question was one of jurisdiction. The case turned upon internal recognition and the exercise of internal sovereignty.

Thus far we find that recognition involves the determination of political questions, which belong to the departments of our government which have charge of our foreign relations: the legislative and executive departments. Once such questions are answered by those departments, the courts are bound to follow their decision. If such were not the established rule, cases could arise in which the executive department might consider a foreign government as at war with the United States, while the judiciary would consider it in a state of peace, and at the same time the legislative department would regard it an non-existent.<sup>38</sup>

Examination reveals a second class of cases where the same principle of law has been applied. This class includes those cases in the examination of which the courts have found that recognition has been expressly refused, or withheld, by the political departments. It may be that the government or state under consideration has been so treated by the political departments of the government as to presume the existence of the old order. The courts in their decisions do not appear to have been conscious of the precise difference in facts, although they appear to have reached the proper conclusions. It matters not save in so far as it has led to confusion in subsequent cases.

This type of case was presented first to the English courts. Early in the nineteenth century, 1804 and 1805, three cases<sup>39</sup> came before the British High Court of Chancery. The city

---

<sup>38</sup> Even the courts might not be able to agree. It is conceivable that each court might recognize a distinct faction and there would be as many factions recognized as there are recognizing courts. The courts will not render what they consider to be a vain decision.

<sup>39</sup> *City of Berne vs. Bank of England*, 9 Ves. Jun., 1804, 347; *Dolder vs. Bank of England*, 10 Ves. Jun., 1804, 352; *Dolder vs. Lord Huntingfield*, 11 Ves. Jun., 1805, 283.

of Berne, Switzerland,<sup>40</sup> sought to restrain the Bank of England and the South Sea Company from transferring certain funds which had been purchased by the municipality prior to the French revolution. The respondents defended on the ground that the then existing government of Switzerland, being unrecognized by the government of England, could not be noticed by the court. Lord Chancellor Eldon was "much struck with the objection." He said that "it was extremely difficult to say, a judicial court can take notice of a Government, never authorized by the Government of the Country, in which that Court sits." It appears that a negative position, a denial of the new government, had been taken by the English government and the judiciary felt bound by their determination.

At about the same time, a British court sitting at Halifax condemned an American vessel<sup>41</sup> for carrying goods to the insurgents in Haiti and Santo Domingo. The court condemned *The Happy Couple* on the ground that England had not recognized a condition of insurgency, but had expressly regarded the island as a French colony. The political departments had denied the existence of a state of insurgency. Three years later, in 1808, other British courts held that colonial ports dominated by insurgents should not be regarded as colonial ports of France within the meaning of the orders in council subjecting neutral ships to condemnation for trading from colonial ports of the enemy, under which the condemnation of *The Happy Couple* had been made.<sup>42</sup>

The courts did not thereby overrule the decision in *The Happy Couple*. The courts construed subsequent orders in council as amounting to an acknowledgment of a state of insurgency. This led the court, in the case of *The Pelican*,<sup>43</sup> to declare that "it always belongs to the government of the

<sup>40</sup> *City of Berne vs. Bank of England*, 9 Ves. Jun., 1804, 347.

<sup>41</sup> *The Happy Couple*, Stewarts Reports, 1805, 65.

<sup>42</sup> *The Manilla*, Edw. Adm., 1808, 1; *The Pelican*, Edw. Adm., App. 1809.

<sup>43</sup> *The Pelican*, *supra*.

country to determine in what relation any other country stands toward it." Then the court added: "That is a point upon which courts of justice cannot decide." At the time the court made these observations the judges were conscious of the change in the attitude taken by the British government in its orders in council. The three cases must be read in that light.

In the United States the point was first raised in *Kennett vs. Chambers*,<sup>44</sup> which involved the independence of Texas. A contract had been executed in Cincinnati, September 16, 1836, whereby a general in the Texas army, was to convey certain lands in Texas to Kennett and others in consideration for which the latter were to equip the said General Chambers' army. Texas had declared herself independent but, at the time of the making of the contract, had not been recognized by the United States. Subsequently the plaintiffs sought to compel performance of the contract. Chambers defended that the contract violated the neutrality laws of the United States. The District Court held that the contract was for an illegal purpose, and therefore took the position that it was void *ab initio*.

It was urged by the plaintiffs, on appeal, before the Supreme Court,<sup>45</sup> that Texas, on September 16, 1836, was an independent state; therefore, the contract in question did not transgress the neutrality laws of the United States. The court refused to agree. Able Chief Justice Taney wrote the opinion. He declared that it was a sufficient answer to the argument to say that the question whether Texas had, or had not, at that time become an independent state, "was a question for that department of our government exclusively which is charged with our foreign affairs." If the courts undertook to inquire whether Texas had not in fact become an independent sovereign state before she was recognized as

---

<sup>44</sup> 14 Howard, 1852, 38.

<sup>45</sup> *Kennett vs. Chambers*, 14 Howard, 1852, 38.

such by the treaty-making power, the courts would take upon themselves the exercise of political authority, "for which a judicial tribunal is wholly unfit, and which the Constitution has conferred exclusively upon another department."<sup>46</sup>

The court found that a negative attitude had been consciously assumed by the political departments of the government. Both Congress and the President denied the existence of Texas as an independent state. The court examined the messages of the President of the United States to the Senate on the subject. It also construed a letter, in point, from the President to the Governor of Tennessee, and a note from the Secretary of State to the Mexican Minister, even though none of these documents had been put in evidence in the case. It was with these facts in mind that the learned justice stated that until Texas was recognized by our government it must be considered as belonging to Mexico.

The point was again raised in the second case of *United States vs. Trumbull*.<sup>47</sup> In a prosecution for violation of the neutrality laws of the United States one Catton was subpoenaed by the prosecution. He appeared in answer to the subpoena, and presented to the court his *exequatur*, issued by President Cleveland.<sup>48</sup> The *exequatur* showed that he had been duly recognized by the Chief Executive as the duly appointed vice-consul of Chile at San Francisco. It declared him to be "free to enjoy and exercise such functions, powers and privileges as are allowed to the vice-consuls of the most favored nations in the United States." He also presented to the court his consular instructions which he had received from the Chilean government, and asked to be relieved from further attendance as a witness. He based his request upon his consular immunity.

The counsel for the United States denied that the immunity asserted by Mr. Catton existed. They offered to prove that

<sup>46</sup> *Kennett vs. Chambers*, 14 Howard, 1852, 38 at pp. 50-51.

<sup>47</sup> 48 Federal, 1891, 94. This was not the initial case.

<sup>48</sup> The *exequatur* bore the date of January 26, 1888.

the government which he represented had been overthrown. The court found itself "unable to take that view of the matter." The court declared that it could not "say that the person who holds the unrevoked *exequatur* issued by the President . . . is in fact not such officer. The recognition of representatives of foreign countries is a matter for the executive department of the government, whose action in the premises is accepted and followed by the judicial department."<sup>49</sup> The political department of the government had in effect denied the existence of the revolutionary government in Chile. The court rightly regarded itself bound by such decision.

More recently the cases arising out of the non-recognition of Russia have presented the identical question to the lower federal courts. In at least two instances one Ludwig Martens, the Soviet representative to the United States, instituted proceedings in admiralty in the District Courts<sup>50</sup> to recover possession of three Russian public vessels which at the time, were under the control of the duly accredited representatives of the Kerensky government. The courts dismissed the suits in both instances.

Martens insisted that he represented and spoke for the Russian sovereignty, regardless of whom the State Department in Washington received, and that the courts should hand over the vessels to him and to the organization back of him. The courts said that this was a question of state, which involved international relations and was "primarily for the State Department." It involved "considerations of national policy which are justiciable and touching it the view of the Chief Executive is the view, not of a branch of the government, but of the national sovereignty, equally binding upon all departments."<sup>51</sup> The court held that it could not

---

<sup>49</sup> Wharton, *International Law Digest*, p. 552.

<sup>50</sup> *The Rogdai*, 278 Federal, 1920, 294; *Ibid.*, 279 Federal, 1920, 130; *The Penza and the Tobolsk*, 277 Federal, 1921, 91.

<sup>51</sup> *The Rogdai*, 278 Federal, 1920, 294 at 296.



"make an independent inquiry, for to do so . . . would be to recognize Martens, while the State Department" denied his existence as well as the existence of the purported organization back of him.<sup>52</sup> A definite attitude had been taken by the political departments and the court felt bound by their determination.

One of the few cases in point in the state courts was before the New Jersey Court of Errors and Appeals in *O'Neill vs. Central Leather Company*.<sup>53</sup> This court acknowledged that it was bound to follow the determination of the political branches of the national government. They examined these and found that the official communications of the President to Congress left no doubt, or room for a contrary inference, that in November 1913, and January 1914, the Carranza and Villa forces in Mexico were recognized by our government as engaged in actual war, and that the courts should govern themselves accordingly.

The New York<sup>54</sup> courts likewise recognize, that, as to them, the negative decision of the President on the question of whether a particular government has been established is conclusive regardless of whether it be right or wrong. They concede that it is not for the judiciary to question the wisdom of action on the part of the other branches of the government.

The cases which have elicited the most discussion and criticism have been those in which recognition was accorded between the time of the commission of the acts in question and the litigation. In the adjudication of these cases the courts have created the fiction of retroactivity. The cases have centered around the belated recognition of Mexico by the United States, and the recognition of the Soviets by the

<sup>52</sup> *The Penza, the Tobolsk*, 277 Federal, 1921, 91 at 93.

<sup>53</sup> 94 Atlantic, 1915, 789.

<sup>54</sup> *State of Yucatan vs. Argumedo*, 92 Misc. Rep., 1915, 547; 157 N. Y. Supp. 219; and see also 179 N. Y. Supp. 713, 109 Misc. 306; 181 N. Y. Supp. 958.

English government. They have involved the assumption of an attitude by the political departments of the government which bound the courts equally as much as in the cases previously considered. Special attention will be given to the retroactivity problem at a later point.<sup>55</sup>

It is next in order to inquire how the courts are to know whether the political departments have assumed a definite attitude toward a particular government. The courts have followed the well-established rule by saying that judicial notice may be taken of the determination of political questions by the political departments of the government. The courts have examined the acts and proclamations of these departments in order to determine the juristic status of the government under consideration. This method has been followed both in the United States and England.

One of the most interesting cases in point is *Yrissari vs. Clement*,<sup>56</sup> which came before the English courts in 1826. An action for libel was brought by the plaintiff as the representative of the Republic of Chile. The defendants objected that the plaintiff had not proved that Chile was a state inasmuch as the English government had not recognized it. In the course of his opinion Lord Chief Justice Best observed that there are three sorts of foreign states: first, states that are merely acknowledged as sovereign independent states; secondly, states in connection, or such as are connected with England by existing treaties; and thirdly, sovereign states unacknowledged by the English government such as Japan, Siam, and many other states which commerce had made her acquainted with.

In cases relative to the first two mentioned classes it is only necessary to prove that the recognizant government has ac-

---

<sup>55</sup> A chapter is devoted to this problem. See, however, *Murray vs. Vanderbilt*, 39 Barbour, 1863, 140 and *Underhill vs. Hernandez*, 168 U. S., 1897, 250 for *dicta* in two early cases. See also *Kennett vs. Chambers*, 14 Howard, 1852, 38, often cited as *contra*.

<sup>56</sup> *Yrissari vs. Clement*, 3 Bing, 1826, 432; 130 English Reprints, 579.

knowledge them or treated them as sovereign independent states. "In many cases," said the court, "it would be unnecessary even to adduce this proof for the great states of the world are taken notice of in acts of Parliament made for confirming treaties and regulating the intercourse with them and of such states the Courts of Law take judicial notice."<sup>57</sup>

The rule is not uniform as to the method by which the courts inform themselves of the views of the political departments. In a case such as that of France or of Brazil where the sovereignty is notorious the Court will act *mero motu*.<sup>58</sup> Also, the court may direct its appropriate officer to make inquiry of the appropriate government department.<sup>59</sup> Sometimes the government in question has addressed a plea for immunity to the Foreign Office of the recognizant state and this has been endorsed and communicated to the court.<sup>60</sup> Also, the court will allow letters from the Foreign Office of the recognizant state concerning the status of the state, or government, in question to be read. It may be that the Law Officers of the Crown, as in the *Parlement Belge*,<sup>61</sup> or the officials of the Attorney General's office, will initiate proceedings to raise the question of the immunity of the foreign state or its property and will appear in support of the claim. Finally, the court will, on its own initiative, invite the Law Officers to appear and address the court upon the status of the foreign state, and to communicate the view of the government. Such a statement is considered the equivalent of a certificate from a Government Department.<sup>62</sup>

In a number of instances the actions of the political departments have not been clear. In such cases the courts have

<sup>57</sup> *Yrissari vs. Clement*, 3 Bing., 1826, 432 at 437.

<sup>58</sup> *Mighell vs. Sultan of Johore*, 1894, L. R. 1 Q. B. 149 at 161.

<sup>59</sup> *Statham vs. Statham and the Gaekwar of Baroda*, L. R. (1912) Prob. Div. 92.

<sup>60</sup> *Porto Alexandre*, 89 L. J. P. (1919) 97; 1920, P. 30.

<sup>61</sup> 1878, L. R., 5 Pro. Div., 197.

<sup>62</sup> *The Gagra* 88 L. J. P., 1919, 101.

found it necessary to construe them. This was done by the Supreme Court of the United States in the famous case of *Cherokee Nation vs. Georgia*.<sup>63</sup> The Cherokee Nation claimed the right as a *foreign nation* to institute a suit in the Supreme Court of the United States to restrain the state of Georgia from enforcing certain objectionable legislation. The question of jurisdiction became important and the court was forced to interpret acts of Congress and of the President. The judges did not agree upon the interpretation. A majority of the court felt that the Cherokee Nation was not a *foreign state* and could not institute the suit in question, while a minority felt that the Cherokee Nation had been treated as a *foreign state* by the political departments of the government and was capable of bringing the suit in question.<sup>64</sup>

The English courts have had occasion to construe acts of the political departments in at least three instances involving the recognition of Russia. The first arose in 1919 in the case of *The Annette and the Dora*.<sup>65</sup> A libel had been filed against certain vessels which in turn claimed immunity on the ground that they had been requisitioned by the Provisional Government of Northern Russia. Thereupon the Admiralty Court addressed an inquiry to the British Foreign Office. It was informed that the government in question had not been recognized.

The court denied the immunity asked for saying that immunity depended on recognition. The judge said: "I have here a negative statement that the Provisional Government of Northern Russia has not been formally recognized by His Majesty's government. I am asked to infer from that that it has been informally recognized as a sovereign state. I do not think that I ought to draw that conclusion. I must be satisfied before I can recognize the Provisional Govern-

---

<sup>63</sup> 5 Peters, 1831, 1.

<sup>64</sup> A weighty dissenting opinion was written by Mr. Justice Johnson.

<sup>65</sup> Admiralty, 88 L. J. P., 1919, 107.

ment of Northern Russia as a sovereign state for the purposes of this case that the British Government so recognizes it. I am not satisfied.”<sup>66</sup>

In the initial case of *Luther vs. Sagor*,<sup>67</sup> in speaking of the materials from the Foreign Office on the legal status of the Soviet Republic, Judge Roche said: “On these materials I am not satisfied that His Majesty’s government has recognized the Soviet Government as the government of a Russian confederative republic or of any sovereign state or power.” He was therefore unable to recognize it, or to hold it as sovereign, or as able by the decree in question to deprive the plaintiff company of its property.<sup>68</sup> At the time the case went up on appeal Great Britain had accorded *de facto* recognition to the Soviets and the court stated that the note of the Foreign Office which declared that it recognized the Soviet Government “as from” a certain date was intended to mean “as on” June 1918. Such was the date of the confiscatory decrees in question in the case.<sup>69</sup>

The next year, 1922, the Court of Appeal again had occasion to interpret communications from the Foreign Office. In an initial suit on an insurance policy,<sup>70</sup> it became important to know whether certain acts of confiscation of the Provisional Worker and Peasant Government were to be considered the acts of the Russian Socialist Federated Soviet Republic. The latter government had been recognized by Great Britain. The insurance policy covered loss by “riot, revolution, and war” but did not cover destruction or confiscation by the government of the country in which the property was situated. Judge Roche of the lower court, who had delivered the initial opinion in *Luther vs. Sagor*,<sup>71</sup> held that the acts causing the loss, by their nature and by the man-

<sup>66</sup> *The Annette and the Dora, supra*, p. 111.

<sup>67</sup> 1821, L. R. 1 K. B. 456.

<sup>68</sup> *Ibid.*, p. 477.

<sup>69</sup> *Luther vs. Sagor* 1921, L. R. 3 K. B. 532.

<sup>70</sup> *White, Child and Beney, Ltd. vs. Simmons*, 127 L. T. R., 1922, 571.

<sup>71</sup> 1921, L. R. 1 K. B. 456.



ner and occasion of their execution, "had all the appearance of acts of 'revolution' and of 'military and usurped power' and not being satisfied" on the materials before him that the exception as to the action of the recognized government applied, held "that the acts were what they" appeared to be. He allowed a recovery.

This determination was reversed by the Court of Appeal. The appellate court held that the government referred to in the exception was not the government existing when the policy was issued, but "the government existing at the time the acts in question took place," and held that the Soviet government came into existence on or about November 14, 1917. Lord Justice Bankes felt "that the sources of information with regard to the time when a particular Foreign government came into existence as a government" was not a matter for the Foreign Office to determine. The exact date must depend on the particular facts before the court from which the court draws its own conclusions. It appeared to him "that the Soviet Government recognized by His Majesty's Government as the *de facto* government of Russia, was in existence as a government in Russia on the 27th of December, 1917."<sup>72</sup>

Lord Justice Atkin, of the Court of Appeal, in the course of his judgment, pointed out that Judge Roche had "sought to obtain from the Foreign Office a statement with regard to the precise date at which the existing Soviet authority came into being as a government. But the Foreign Office did not answer that question."<sup>73</sup> On the evidence before the court it appeared to be plain that the government which had been recognized by the British government was exercising the functions of government over the country in which the insured property was situated at the material dates in the

---

<sup>72</sup> *White, Child, and Beney, Ltd., vs. Simmons*, 127 L. T. R., 1922, 571 at pp. 582-583.

<sup>73</sup> *Ibid.*, p. 584.

case. The court made its own interpretation of the materials submitted by the Foreign Office.

We note that in the two preceding cases the Court of Appeal made direct inquiry of the executive. In the United States this point was raised and modified in the case of *The Russian Government vs. Lehigh Valley Railway*.<sup>74</sup> An action was brought prior the fall of the Provisional Government to recover damages for a property loss sustained in the famous Black Tom explosion. The defendant moved to dismiss the suit on the ground that there was no Provisional Government and hence no plaintiff. Thereupon the plaintiff produced a certificate from the Secretary of State to the effect that the Kerensky government had been recognized and that Mr. Bakhmeteff was its duly accredited ambassador to the United States. The attorneys also produced a statement from Mr. Bakhmeteff that the action had been instituted by proper authority.<sup>75</sup>

At this juncture the defendants asked the court to address an independent inquiry to the State Department concerning the status of the Kerensky Government at that time. The court refused to make the inquiry. It held that the certificates from the State Department were conclusive. However, the court admitted that there may "arise situations of a character which would suggest to the courts an inquiry of this nature, but the court will make official inquiry only for reasons of an impelling character, especially where such inquiry may involve pending questions of the greatest delicacy."<sup>76</sup> However, in this case the courts regarded the certificates from the State Department as conclusive.<sup>77</sup>

In concluding the discussion of this group of cases we find that where an attitude toward a government or state has

<sup>74</sup> 293 Federal, 1919, 133, and 293 Federal, 1923, 135.

<sup>75</sup> These are reproduced in full in the case.

<sup>76</sup> *Russian Government vs. Lehigh Valley Railway*, *supra*, p. 133.

<sup>77</sup> For the ultimate disposition of this case, discussed *infra* see *United States Daily*, December 13, 1927.

been taken by the executive or legislative departments of the recognizant government, or both, the courts regard the decision as binding upon the judiciary. In such cases the sole function of the courts is to interpret the communications solicited from the political departments of the government.

The cases indicate three reasons back of this rule. In the first place, sound reasoning, as well as policy, demands that the judiciary act in unison with the political departments in matters involving foreign relations.<sup>78</sup> In the second place, the conduct of foreign affairs of which recognition forms a part is, by the Constitution, vested exclusively in the political departments of the government.<sup>79</sup> Finally, the courts are not equipped to decide such questions. They are political in nature.<sup>80</sup> The courts themselves have given the foregoing as the reasons why they should not enter into an examination of the facts to determine for themselves which is the lawfully instituted government in a designated state where a previous decision has been made by the political departments. An additional reason, unmentioned in the decisions, is that in the absence of recognition, in cases of adverse judgment, the courts would have no means of enforcing their decisions.

The rule is the same, whether it be the recognition of a state of insurgency,<sup>81</sup> or of belligerency,<sup>82</sup> or of complete independence<sup>83</sup> of a foreign community. The legal consequences are the same regardless of whether the attitude is favorable or unfavorable, and regardless of whether recog-

<sup>78</sup> *The Rogdai*, 278 Federal 294; *Ibid.*, 279 Federal, 1920, 130; *The Hornet*, *supra*; *Foster vs. Globe Venture Syndicate*, 69 L. J. Ch., 1900, 375.

<sup>79</sup> *Oetjen vs. Central Leather Co.*, *supra*; *Ricaud vs. American Metal Co.*, *supra* and the cases there cited.

<sup>80</sup> *Kennett vs. Chambers*, *supra*; *Republic of Peru vs. Peruvian Guano Co.*, *supra*.

<sup>81</sup> *The Three Friends*, 116 U. S., 1890, 1; *The Pelican*, 1809, Edw. Adm., App. D.

<sup>82</sup> *The United States vs. Palmer*, 3 Wheaton, 1818, 610 at 634; *The Divina Pastora*, 4 Wheaton, 1819, 52 at 63; *The Nueva Anna*, 6 Wheaton, 1821, 193.

<sup>83</sup> *Thompson vs. Powles*, 2 Sim., 1828, 194 at 212; *Taylor vs. Barclay*, 2 Sim., 1828, 213; *Republic of Peru vs. Dreyfus Brothers*, L. R. 38 Ch. D., 1888, 348.

nition is made prior to, at the time, or subsequent to the rise of the controversy under adjudication. In all cases the courts take judicial notice of the actions of the political branches of the government.

There remain to be considered those cases in which, at the time of the litigation, no position has been taken by either the legislative or the executive departments of the government. It is this type of case which has given the courts their greatest concern, and to which attention will be given in the succeeding chapter.

## CHAPTER IV

### JURISTIC STATUS OF UNRECOGNIZED GOVERNMENTS

In the preceding chapters we found that recognition is merely the admission of the facts of state life and that these facts may exist independent of their recognition or admission. This is just as true in international life as it is in national or municipal life. Since the act of admission is essentially one of discretion or policy, it belongs naturally to the political departments of the government and particularly to the department in charge of foreign affairs. Once the political departments have declared their policy such decision is conclusive and binding upon the judicial branch of the government.

On the other hand if the political departments have not declared in favor of a *de facto* situation, whether it be a condition of insurgency, belligerency or independence, or if by their actions the political departments neither expressly nor impliedly deny the existence of the *de facto* situation, but merely hold aloof and withhold recognition, a very different situation is encountered. It can scarcely be said that the mere withholding of recognition is a denial of the existence of state life. It is not: at most, it is only a failure to admit it.<sup>1</sup>

The political departments may be in doubt, or they may keep silent awaiting further developments. Meanwhile the facts of state life move on: the state embryo develops to normal statehood. It thrives and functions. Other states notice it and accord it recognition. Encouraged by such admissions on the part of older states, the new state launches

---

<sup>1</sup> See the award of Mr. Chief Justice Taft as sole arbitrator in the controversy between Great Britain and Costa Rica, *supra*.



into a policy of anti-capitalism and attempts to convert all people to the wisdom of its policy. At this juncture the acts of the *de facto* state, or the facts of state life, are put in evidence in the courts of non-recognizant states. A suit is instituted against an unrecognized state or government, or the recognized government itself institutes the suit, or a suit is instituted by a corporation created by the unrecognized government, or such a corporation sets up non-recognition as a bar to a suit, or it may be that the acts of the non-recognized government are set up as a defense in a suit in the courts of a non-recognizant state. Such cases involve points of recognition: individual rights hinge upon them, and the courts cannot escape them in their decisions. They are *de facto* situations.

Are the courts of non-recognizant states to treat the silence of their coordinate political departments as evidence either for or against the actual existence of the facts? May the courts take cognizance of the actual facts as they exist? It is this type of situations to which attention is invited in the present chapter.

The cases center around the *de facto* situations created by the unrecognized Latin American states in their early history, the War of 1812, the Civil War, and the present Soviet regime in Russia. In the cases under consideration in this section the issues before the courts turn upon the existence of *de facto* situations: recognition is only incidentally involved. In the cases considered in the preceding chapter the issues turned upon recognition: political considerations were involved and the courts rightly looked to the political departments for guidance. The instant cases involve such problems as the interpretation of a treaty, the duties of a non-recognizant state in cases of *de facto* war, the immunities of *de facto* governments and states or their foreign representatives, and the ability of such *de facto* states, govern-

ments and foreign agents to sue or be sued in the courts of a non-recognizant state: questions of fact, not policy.

The decisions of the courts in such situations are by no means uniform. Some of the courts have boasted of their ability to determine the juristic status of a state or government only to embarrass their successors on the bench, as well as the political departments.<sup>2</sup> Generally, however, the courts have been more conscious of a desire to avoid embarrassing the executive department in its control of foreign affairs.

An examination reveals three distinct types of treatment of these situations. In the first group of cases the courts have regarded the old order of things as continuing. This treatment is somewhat comparable to some of the cases which we have already considered, except, that in these cases, involving a continuation of the old order, the courts independently have enunciated the principle, rather than followed a predetermined policy of the President or Congress. This has been unfortunate in that in some of the early cases the judges appear to have been confused. One is not always able to determine with precision which of the two rules the courts pretend to have adopted.

The view that the courts will regard the old order as continuing was first injected into the American decisions by Mr. Chief Justice Marshall in his now classical dictum in *Rose vs. Himely*.<sup>3</sup> Here the learned judge observed that "courts of justice must consider the ancient state of things as remaining unaltered" and the sovereign power of France over Santo Domingo as still subsisting unless relinquished by France or recognized by the Government of the United States.

This dictum was accepted as conclusive by Mr. Justice

---

<sup>2</sup> The courts of the United States and England interpret and apply International Law as a part of their municipal law. *The Paquete Habana*, 175 U. S., 1900, 677; *Triquet vs. Bath*, 3 Burr., 1764, 1478. Contra, by implication, *West Rand Gold Mining Co., vs. Rex*, 1905, L. R. 2 K. B., 391.

<sup>3</sup> 4 Cranch, 1808, 241 at 272.

Story in *Gelston vs. Hoyt*,<sup>4</sup> where he took the position that until recognition of the *Petion* government in Santo Domingo by our government or the government to which the new state formerly belonged, "courts of justice are bound to consider the ancient state of things as remaining unaltered."<sup>5</sup> Although Mr. Chief Justice Marshall had in mind the refusal of the political departments to acknowledge the independence of Santo Domingo, yet his *dictum* formed the basis of subsequent decisions in which the courts themselves enunciated what they considered to be the same rule, but which was in fact quite different.

As early as 1811 Mr. Justice Washington<sup>6</sup> construed acts of our government, in relation to Santo Domingo, "in order to discover the light in which Congress viewed it." He found that our government had refused to acknowledge the independence of the island. On the other hand he found that it had "very plainly declared the contrary."<sup>7</sup>

In a subsequent case, *Kennett vs. Chambers*,<sup>8</sup> the court followed the set precedents. However, Mr. Chief Justice Taney, who delivered the opinion of the court, was conscious that he was following the decision already made by the President and Congress with reference to the independence of Texas. He pointed out that Texas, although seemingly independent, "had not been acknowledged by the United States; and the constituted authorities charged with our foreign relations, regarded the treaties we had made with Mexico as still in full force, and obligatory upon both nations."<sup>9</sup> The independence of Texas was not acknowledged by the Government of the United States until the beginning of March, 1837. Up to that time, it was regarded as a

<sup>4</sup> *Gelston vs. Hoyt*, 3 Wheaton, 1818, 246.

<sup>5</sup> *Ibid.*, at 324.

<sup>6</sup> *Clark vs. United States*, Federal Case No. 2,838, 5 Fed. Cas. 932.

<sup>7</sup> *Ibid.*, at 933 and 934.

<sup>8</sup> 14 Howard, 1852, 38. The case involved suit on a note which was void *ab initio* because in violation of our neutrality laws.

<sup>9</sup> *Ibid.*, p. 46.

part of the territory of Mexico. Such was the conscious position taken by the learned chief justice.

Mr. Chief Justice Taney attached great weight to the President's message of December 22, 1836, to the Senate in which he referred to the "delicacy and responsibility" of recognition and commented on the policy of the United States. He noted that the President had advised Congress against the acknowledgment of the independence of Texas at that time. He quoted at length from the President's message, and concluded that "the whole object of the message" appeared to have been "to impress upon Congress the impropriety of acknowledging the independence of Texas at that time; and the more especially as the American character of her population, and her known desire to become a State of this Union, might, if prematurely acknowledged, bring suspicion upon the motives by which we were governed."

The court quoted from the public documents not only to show that, in the judgment of our government, "Texas had not established its independence at the time"<sup>10</sup> . . . but to show how anxiously the constituted authorities were endeavoring to maintain untarnished the honor of the country" and to place it above the suspicion of taking any part in the conflict. Later in its decision the court referred to this as the "open and avowed policy" of our government.<sup>11</sup>

For the purpose of the case the struggle between Mexico and Texas was not even recognized as a state of insurgency or belligerency and the court did not have to decide how far the courts would enforce a contract when two states, acknowledged to be independent, were at war and this country neutral. Until such recognition in this case the court regarded the old order as continuing, but in so doing it was consciously adhering to the "open and avowed policy" of the executive department. The cases of *Rose vs. Himely*, *Gelston vs.*

---

<sup>10</sup> That is, at the time the contract under consideration was executed, 1836.

<sup>11</sup> *Kennett vs. Chambers*, 14 Howard; 1852, 38 at 48.

*Hoyt*, and *De Wutz vs. Hendricks* were cited as being in accord.<sup>12</sup> The old order continued.

Prior to the rendition of the *Kennett vs. Chambers* decision<sup>13</sup> the Supreme Court had established a *dictum* on the point in the case of *Williams vs. The Suffolk Insurance Company*,<sup>14</sup> where Mr. Justice McLean found that the President in his message, and in his correspondence with the government of Buenos Ayres, had denied the jurisdiction which Buenos Ayres assumed to exercise over the Falkland Islands: facts which the court said "must be taken and acted on . . . as thus asserted and maintained."<sup>15</sup>

In taking cognizance of a *de facto* situation which involved an internal change, the state courts as early as 1847 regarded the former status as continuing.<sup>16</sup> In that year a case involving the point was decided in the Supreme Court of Louisiana. The voyage of an American vessel had been broken up and the cargo had been landed and sold under color of an insurgent military authority at Champeachy, in the Mexican province of Yucatan. The judges requested the counsel to furnish the court with information as to the course assumed by the Government of the United States toward the so-called insurgent government in Yucatan. The Louisiana court declared that the "proceedings of courts in cases of this kind depended entirely on the action of the general government." There was no evidence before the court that a state of insurgency had been recognized by the United States as existing between the insurgent power in Yucatan and the national government of Mexico. Under these circumstances the court denied the rights of the defendant, presumed the old order to continue, and gave judgment

<sup>12</sup> *Rose vs. Himely*, 4 Cranch, 1808, 272; *Gelston vs. Hoyt*, 3 Wheaton, 1818, 324; and *De Wutz vs. Hendricks*, 9 Moore's C. B. Reports, 1824, 586.

<sup>13</sup> 14 Howard, 1852, 38.

<sup>14</sup> *Williams vs. Suffolk Insurance Co.*, 13 Peters, 1839, 415.

<sup>15</sup> *Ibid.*, p. 420.

<sup>16</sup> *Dimond vs. Petit*, 2 La. Ann., 1847, 537.



for the plaintiffs.<sup>17</sup> The court itself took the initiative: it presumed that the old arrangement continued and decided the case accordingly.

The most positive language is found in the case of *The Hornet*.<sup>18</sup> A steamer had been seized upon a libel of information, founded upon a charge of violating the neutrality laws of the United States. One Morales Lemus, an agent of the so-called "Republic of Cuba," asked to be allowed to intervene, to interpose a claim for the property on behalf of his so-called government, and thereby contest the suit.

At the trial of the case in 1870 before District Judge Brooks the only question argued and decided was as to the propriety of allowing the claim of Senor Lemus. Judge Brooks confessed embarrassment on being called upon to decide such an important question and intimated that he would appreciate a revision at the hands of the Supreme Court.<sup>19</sup> He considered the cases of *The United States vs. Palmer*,<sup>20</sup> *The Divina Pastora*,<sup>21</sup> and *Luther vs. Borden*<sup>22</sup> at length. He did not deem it necessary to refer to other cases and held that "it cannot be intended that such (recognition) power should be vested in the courts." He thought that "it would be a power dangerous to our government to be so vested, and one which judges could not so well exercise as Congress or the Executive."

The courts must give regard to the old *status quo*, for if the courts, before the political departments have spoken, have the right to take one step in this direction, Judge Brooks

---

<sup>17</sup> In this case the defendant, an American citizen, was one of the captors: "Indeed," said the court, "from the evidence, we should infer him to have been the leader of them," and he is sued for damages by the plaintiff, who was the owner of the vessel and one-half of the cargo.

<sup>18</sup> Federal Case No. 6,705, 12 Federal Cases 529.

<sup>19</sup> "Were I satisfied that my opinion would be revised by the supreme court, and be by that body corrected if wrong, I would announce the conclusion to which I have come with less reluctance than I do." 12 Federal Cases, 529 at 530.

<sup>20</sup> 4 Wheaton, 1818, 610.

<sup>21</sup> 4 Wheaton, 1819, 52.

<sup>22</sup> 7 Howard, 1849, 1.

could "not see any limit to their power, short of declaring perfect freedom and independence." The court endeavored to determine the attitude of the political departments: it inquired, "what act had been performed," what resolution, declaration or proclamation had been made by Congress or the Executive, "indicating an intention on their part to acknowledge, at any time or to any extent, the existence of the Republic of Cuba?" Nothing of that character had been shown. In the absence of such proof he held that he could "not know of the existence of such a government." The claims of the purported agent of the so-called "Republic of Cuba" were denied: the court assumed that the old order of things continued.

The issue had been raised under a slightly different set of facts as early as 1821.<sup>23</sup> The cargoes of two Spanish vessels had been captured and condemned by a pretended Mexican court of admiralty sitting at Galveston, under the alleged authority of the unrecognized Mexican republic. After the condemnation, the goods were brought into the port of New Orleans. There the goods were libelled in the federal District Court, by the Spanish consul on behalf of the original owners. The court decreed restitution.

The captors appealed to the Supreme Court where they contended that the cargoes had been seized and condemned by the Mexican state under its power to authorize captures in war. The Spanish consul defended that in the absence of recognition no power of capture should be admitted by the court. The court stated that it did not recognize the existence of any court of admiralty sitting at Galveston under Mexican authority with jurisdiction to adjudicate on captures. Furthermore, the Government of the United States had not hitherto acknowledged the existence of any Mexican republic or state, at war with Spain, so that the court could

---

<sup>23</sup> *The Nueva Anna and The Liebre: the Spanish Consul, Claimant*, 6 Wheaton, 1821, 193.

not consider as legal any acts done under the flag and commission of such republic or state. Every department of the national government denied the existence of the purported Mexican republic.<sup>24</sup> Each regarded Mexico as a Spanish possession.

On reflection it appears that it is a pure fiction for the courts to say that in such cases the prior status must be deemed to continue. Nevertheless, it furnishes a theory upon which the courts are able to operate. In the recent cases arising out of the belated recognition of the Carranza regime, and the non-recognition of the Soviet Republic, the fiction has mocked the truth, but no more so than the State Department's continued recognition of the Kerensky government. The unfortunate thing is that such situations possess latent dangers and may result in the miscarriage of justice.

Some of the courts have realized the absurdity of presuming a continuance of the old order, and have adopted a second alternative. In the absence of recognition, they regard a *de facto* government as non-existent, without regard for the old regime. This view is also open to attack, in that it evades the true facts of state life, yet it has received much consideration at the hands of the courts. Although this alternative is evasive of the truth, yet it forms the basis of a number of interesting decisions to which attention must be called.

In a comparatively recent case, 1922, an American citizen resident in Mexico had died intestate. The Mexican courts had appointed his widow administratrix, but the New York courts denied the capacity of such administratrix to sue on the executed notes of a domestic corporation.

When the suit was instituted the counsel for the corporation defended that an administratrix appointed by a foreign court could not maintain an action in any of the courts of the

---

<sup>24</sup> See also *The United States vs. the Pirates*, 5 Wheaton, 1820, 184, for a discussion of seven previously considered cases which involved a similar point.

United States so long as the foreign government remained unrecognized by the State Department in Washington.

Thereupon the defendant corporation moved for judgment on the pleadings. The Supreme Court of New York granted the motion. The court said: "The administratrix plaintiff is an officer of a foreign court. . . . It is syllogistically true that if the foreign court has no recognized power here she may not assert a right derived through her appointment therefrom. . . . The Mexican government is not *de facto* here, since recognition alone can make it so.

"It may have all the attributes of a ruling faction, a colony, a district of people, or maintain any other form of suzerainty in its established domain, but its power as a government remains nil without our patent of recognition. As the parent of the court it cannot have notice, either judicial or administrative, and surely the creature cannot be possessed of a power not given its creator. The duty to declare the legal incapacity to sue is paramount to a consideration of the evils attendant upon the failure of justice resultant upon this policy of international relations."<sup>25</sup>

<sup>25</sup> *The Unrecognized Government or State in English and American Law*, E. D. Dickinson, 22 Mich. Law Rev., 1922, 29 and 118 for discussion of the instant case. Contra, *Russian Socialist Federated Soviet Republic vs. Cibrario*, unreported opinion, in which Judge McAvoy, in allowing an action for an accounting on a trust, by an unrecognized government, said: "Whether the government be a *de facto* government or a society, colony, district of people, or a voluntary association capable of owning and disposing of money and property is not inherently germane to its right to succession to the former sovereignty of Russia, the reception and despatch of ambassadors, consuls and other governmental agents, the power to issue commissions of military or naval operations which would be recognized by neutrals, or the possession of other indicia of sovereign power. The question of its existence as the proprietor of this money and property is one of fact and justiciable in common courts unless the claim be suggested by a recognized authority of the former regime that the earlier order of government demands the fund or chose." However, this determination was unanimously reversed by the Appellate Division of the First Department, 198 App. Div., 1921, 869, 191 N. Y. Supp. 543. The case was then taken to the Court of Appeals which unanimously affirmed the reversal below. 235 N. Y., 1923, 255. Suit was then instituted by one Preobazhenski, as trustee. The court held that the right of action had been extinguished by the former suit. But the court said that even if it had not been terminated "the fact that the so-called Soviet Republic has been held not to have capacity to sue in the courts" of New York, "its individual members have no better or greater rights than their principal." *Preobazhenski et al. vs. Cibrario et al.*, 192 N. Y. Supp., 1922, 275.



The widow, having failed in the initial suit, procured letters of administration in New York state; whereupon, she moved to amend her pleadings by asserting her status as administratrix under the New York law and dropping her status as administratrix under the Mexican law. The Supreme Court, at the special term, New York county, March, 1922, allowed the pleadings to be amended. Mr. Justice McAvoy, who delivered the former opinion, felt that a strict interpretation of the statute would "permit the court to allow this amendment or supplement to her complaint, and it would seem a purely technical exercise of power and discretion to refuse it."<sup>26</sup> "The local administratrix, gifted by the courts here with power, has the right of suit, and is thus always a proper party for instituting an action," said he.<sup>27</sup>

The motion to amend the pleadings was reversed<sup>28</sup> by the appellate division. It adopted the view<sup>29</sup> that the "motion was to permit the plaintiff to serve an amended complaint when there was nothing to amend." Having denied her access to the courts, it would be anomalous to entertain a motion to amend her complaint:<sup>30</sup> whereupon the appellate division denied the motion to amend the petition. The ultimate disposition of this case cannot be determined from the reports.

In this case much delay, if not injustice, and litigation costs were heaped upon the plaintiff. It does not appear from the pleadings that the defendants denied liability on the notes; the case turned upon the defense of non-recognition.

---

<sup>26</sup> Civil Practice Act, sec., 192.

<sup>27</sup> *Pelzer vs. United Dredging Company*, 118 Misc. Rep. 210, 193 N. Y. Supp. 675.

<sup>28</sup> *Ibid.*, 200 App. Div. 646, 193 N. Y. Supp. 676.

<sup>29</sup> First Department, Appellate Division, Supreme Court, Apr. 7, 1922.

<sup>30</sup> Other citations for subsequent trials are: *Pelzer vs. Perry*, 194 N. Y. Supp., 965; *Pelzer vs. United Dredging Co.*, 194 N. Y. Supp., 965; *Pelzer vs. Perry*, *Pelzer vs. United Dredging Co.*, 196 N. Y. Supp. 342, 202 App. Div. 58. One cannot ascertain from the cases reported what disposition of the case was ultimately made.



tion. In the case of Mexico considerations of diplomacy restrained an expression of recognition until long after the Carranza faction was in *de facto* control. The silence of the political departments did not necessarily connote that a government did not exist; that a state of anarchy prevailed south of the Rio Grande. Nevertheless, the courts took the position that in the absence of recognition cognizance of the situation could not be taken.<sup>31</sup> It would appear that the court should have recognized the *de facto* situation and allowed a recovery, inasmuch as both parties were within the jurisdiction of the court and the defendants did not deny liability.

Two years later, 1924, the same department of the appellate division of the New York Supreme Court had occasion to reconsider the point. An application had been made by the Salamandra Insurance Company,<sup>32</sup> a Russian private corporation, for an order of mandamus to compel the New York Commissioner of Insurance to deliver up certain securities which had been deposited to guarantee the performance of insurance contracts made by the company within the state of New York. The State Superintendent of Insurance opposed the application upon the ground that the petitioner had been destroyed by the decree of the Soviet Government, hence it was not entitled to the property. The application was granted and the determination was unanimously affirmed, without opinion. Thus it does not appear whether the court regarded the decision as a modification of the principle enunciated in *Pelzer vs. United Dredging Company*. However, a pertinent difference in the cases makes it possible to square the decisions.<sup>33</sup>

<sup>31</sup> 193 N. Y. Supp. 675.

<sup>32</sup> *Salamandra Insurance Company vs. Stoddard*, 209 App. Div. (N. Y.), 1924, 871.

<sup>33</sup> The difference is in the facts of the two cases. In *Pelzer vs. United Dredging Company* it appears that the plaintiff claimed as administratrix by appointment from a Mexican court at which time Mexico stood unrecognized. While in the *Salamandra Insurance* case the plaintiff was incorporated under the former Czar's government, which at the time was recognized by the United States.

In those jurisdictions in which retroactivity is the established rule,<sup>34</sup> if the courts insist that until affirmative action is taken by the political departments of the government, the *de facto* government may be regarded as non-existent, or the prior status may be deemed to continue, their insistence creates an arbitrary distinction. In a suit brought prior to such recognition the action of the *de facto* foreign government would be regarded as void, while in the same suit brought subsequent to recognition the same acts would be regarded as valid, or if recognition is accorded while the case is in litigation the acts would be regarded as valid. This was the identical situation presented in the *Luther vs. Sagor* cases.<sup>35</sup>

A dictum to this effect was enunciated in *Yucatan vs. Argumedo*.<sup>36</sup> An action was brought in the New York courts by the Mexican state of Yucatan against a former governor for alleged mismanagement of the funds of the plaintiff state. The action was instituted October 1, 1915, by authorities acting under the Carranza government which had driven the defendant from the country. Eighteen days later the United States accorded *de facto* recognition to the Carranza government. At the trial Argumedo denied the ability of the state of Yucatan to prosecute the suit because the Carranza faction stood unrecognized at the time the suit was instituted. The court upheld the right of the plaintiff to sue inasmuch as recognition was retroactive in effect and validated the plaintiff's claim.

However, the court said that if this had been a controversy between two factions, each claiming to constitute the *de facto* government of a foreign state and in order to render an

---

<sup>34</sup> In cases involving recognition between the time of the commission of the act and the litigation.

<sup>35</sup> 1921 L. R. 1 K. B., 456 for the initial case. 1921 L. R. 3 K. B., 532 on appeal. Discussion of the point is reserved for treatment in a subsequent chapter dealing with retroactivity.

<sup>36</sup> 92 Misc. Rep., N. Y., 1915, 547. The doctrine of retroactivity should not have been applied in this case since no act done within the jurisdiction of the recognized government was in question in the case.

effective judgment the court had to determine which faction did constitute the *de facto* government, the court would have declined jurisdiction.<sup>37</sup> By its attitude the court implied that in the absence of recognition recovery could not be had: in its absence the court would regard the *de facto* government as a non-entity.

In 1923, the Court of Claims adopted the same view and, seemingly, conclusively determined that an unrecognized government can not be proved before that court, regardless of how meritorious it regards the claim.<sup>38</sup> It appears in this case that a private Russian insurance company, incorporated under the Russian laws prior to 1918, with its home office at Petrograd, had moved its central office to Paris and continued to do business from that office. Prior to and subsequent to the removal of the head office the insurance company had sold fire and marine insurance in the United States.

In an action brought in the United States Court of Claims to recover certain back taxes, the government moved to dismiss the suit on the ground that the court had no jurisdiction, because Russia remained unrecognized. The Court of Claims so held and dismissed the suit. The court found that the case itself was meritorious, but the jurisdictional issue barred relief. The court felt that it could not enter into a review of political and social conditions to ascertain what is an apparent, open and notorious fact.

The plaintiff then argued that in the absence of recognition the court should presume the continuance of the Provisional Government which preceded the Soviet Republic. The court conceded that such a view was interesting and inviting, but refused to concur in it, because the plaintiff company itself "was compelled to flee in haste to a foreign country in order to preserve its assets and conduct its ordinary business, free from the dangers of a successful revolution" "The case it-

<sup>37</sup> *Yucatan vs. Argumedo*, 92 Misc. Rep. (N. Y.), 1915, 547, at 552.

<sup>38</sup> *Rossia Insurance Co., vs. United States*, 58 Ct. of Cl., 1923, 180.

self," said the court, "is manifestly meritorious and but for the lack of jurisdiction would undoubtedly result in substantial relief to the plaintiff company."<sup>39</sup> The contentions might with more propriety be addressed to Congress, "the only tribunal with jurisdiction to entertain them."

Syllogistically this view means that where a *de facto* government fails, recognition not having been accorded, all of its acts are void. It does not seem logical to say that a *de facto* government must maintain its position until recognition is accorded in order to validate its governmental acts. It was to escape this dilemma that some of the courts early searched for a third alternative.

This alternative has been to allow the court to investigate the *de facto* situation, and independently to determine the exact status of the government in question. Obviously this method should not be resorted to save in those cases wherein no definite attitude has been taken by the political departments. In such cases the method has a considerable degree of justification.

In the United States, Mr. Chief Justice Marshall took cognizance of a *de facto* situation for the first time in the celebrated case of *Rose vs. Himely*. Consideration was given to this case in the preceding chapter. The next instance was in 1819 in a case arising out of the War of 1812.<sup>40</sup>

The collector of customs at Castine, Maine, after the termination of the war, instituted suit to collect the duty on goods brought in through the port at the time it was under the *de facto* control of the British. The importers defended that they had paid all duties levied by the British officials, the authorities in control of the port at the time the goods were brought in, and that they were *ipso facto* relieved of further liability. The Supreme Court so held. It refused to sustain our government's claim. In so doing Mr. Justice Story

---

<sup>39</sup> *Rossia Insurance Co., vs. United States*, 58 Ct., of Cl., 1923, 180 at 181.

<sup>40</sup> *United States vs. Rice*, 4 Wheaton, 1819, 246.



was thereby forced to acknowledge and judge the *de facto* situation, which the importers had set up as a defense.<sup>41</sup> This case did not involve an act of Congress or a proclamation of the President. The only issue was the existence of a *de facto* situation of which the Supreme Court of the United States took cognizance.

A dictum to this effect was announced by Mr. Chief Justice Marshall in 1818 in the case of *United States vs. Palmer*,<sup>42</sup> where the learned justice said that persons or vessels "employed in the service of a self-declared government" acknowledged to be maintaining its separate existence by war "must be permitted to prove the fact of their being actually employed in such service, by the same testimony which would be sufficient to prove that such vessel or person was employed in the service of an acknowledged state. . . . Such unacknowledged state . . . may be proved by such testimony as the nature of the case admits. . . ." <sup>43</sup>

In 1820, Mr. Justice Livingston, in a case involving the legal status of Venezuela, found it necessary to remark that "this republic is composed of the inhabitants of a portion of the dominions of Spain in South America, who have been for sometime past, and still are, maintaining a contest for inde-

---

<sup>41</sup>" By the conquest and military occupation of Castine, the enemy acquired that firm possession which enabled him to exercise the fullest rights of sovereignty over that place. The sovereignty of the United States over the territory was . . . suspended, and the laws of the United States could no longer be rightfully enforced there, or be obligatory upon the inhabitants who remained and submitted to the conquerors. By the surrender the inhabitants passed under a temporary allegiance to the British government, and were bound by such laws, and such only, as it chose to recognize and impose. From the nature of the case no other law could be obligatory upon them, for where there is no protection or allegiance of sovereignty, there can be no claim to obedience. Castine was, therefore, during this period, so far as respected our revenue laws, to be deemed a foreign port; and goods imported into it by the inhabitants, were subject to such duties only as the British government choose to require," said the court. *United States vs. Rice*, 4 Wheaton 246 at page 254. Mr. Justice Story delivered the opinion. The courts of the United States have applied the same principle where duties are paid to insurgents in *de facto* control of a foreign port. See on this point: *Fleming vs. Page*, 9 Howard, 1850, 603; *MacCleod vs. The United States*, 229 U. S., 1913, 416.

<sup>42</sup> 3 Wheaton, 1818, 610.

<sup>43</sup> *Ibid.*, p. 635.



pendence with the mother country." Although not acknowledged by our government as an independent nation "this nation cannot but respect the belligerent rights of both parties; and does not treat as pirates the cruisers of either, so long as they act under, and within the scope of their respective commissions."

In the case of *The Consul of Spain vs. La Concepcion*, Mr. Justice Johnson, while on circuit duty, had occasion to observe that courts exercising jurisdiction of International Law may often be called upon to deduce the fact of national independence "from history, evidence, or public notoriety where there has been no formal public recognition. The actual possession and long exercise of all the attributes of a state of independence may be legally resorted to, without giving just cause of umbrage to a nation that does not possess the power to subjugate a revolted colony. There exist many nations at this day which may claim of courts of International Law all the rights of independent nations and may be judicially recognized as such, notwithstanding no act of government has acknowledged them in that capacity."<sup>44</sup> This statement of the learned justice is most interesting in view of the recent cases involving the non-recognition of Russia and the belated recognition of Mexico, in the course of which the courts refused to accord the *de facto* governments any status in the absence of recognition.<sup>45</sup>

At about the same date the English courts declared in favor of the same view. Lord Justice Best, on one occasion, said that the "existence of unacknowledged states must be proved by evidence." He felt that the proof necessary to establish the existence of the governments under consideration, Chile and Buenos Ayres, was that they were associations formed for mutual defense, which acknowledged no authority

<sup>44</sup> Federal Case No. 3,137, 6 Federal Cases 360, 2 Wh. Cr. Cases, 597.

<sup>45</sup> *Rossia Insurance Co., vs. United States*, *supra*; *Pelzer vs. The United Dredging Co.*, *supra*; see especially *R. S. F. S. R. vs. Cibrario*, *supra* and *Preobazhenski vs. Cibrario et al* *supra*.

other than that of their own government, observed the rules of justice to the subjects of other states, lived generally under their own laws and maintained their independence by their own force. He felt that it made no difference "that the new state formed part of another acknowledged state: states may be legitimately divided. The states of Holland and America were treated as sovereign states by the nations of Europe before their independence was acknowledged by Spain and Great Britain."<sup>46</sup>

The point was reserved for the subsequent consideration of the court, and when the defendants pressed their point on a new motion, Lord Justice Best said: "I decided at the trial that the existence of these states (referring to Chile and Buenos Ayres) was proved and I have now the satisfaction to state that all my learned brothers fully concur with me in thinking that there is no foundation for the objection which has been raised. . . ."<sup>47</sup>

The defendants pressed their argument for a non-suit on their new motion, but the court held that calling Chile a state in the alleged libel made further proof unnecessary: it was an admission of the very fact on the part of the defendant which he was attempting to disprove. On principle it would seem that proof of the existence of the *de facto* gov-

<sup>46</sup> *Yrissari vs. Clement*, 3 Bing., 1826, 432 at 437. This case involved an action for libel. The plaintiff claimed to be the duly appointed representative of Chile, for which he was attempting to float a loan in England. Plaintiff alleged that defamatory matter had been published concerning his actions in connection with the loan. At the trial before the English Court of Common Pleas he offered evidence that Chile was a state. It was objected that the court should take judicial notice that Chile belonged to Spain. The court was asked to regard the old order as continuing. The court refused. The justice said: "I take the rule to be this—if a body of persons assemble together to protect themselves, and support their own independence, and make laws, and have Courts of Justice, that is evidence of their being a state. We have had, certainly, some evidence here today that these provinces formerly belonged to Spain; but it would be a strong thing to say, that because they once belonged, therefore they must always belong. . . . It makes no difference whether they formerly belonged to Spain, if they do not continue to acknowledge it, and are in possession of a force sufficient to support themselves in opposition to it."

<sup>47</sup> *Ibid.*, 100 Eng. Rep. 579.

ernment in Chile should have been sufficient, without the defendant's admission. In fact, the suit did not require a decision on the point of recognition, inasmuch as libel is as injurious to the representative of a *de facto* government as to anyone else. The case turned primarily upon the proof of the *de facto* government in Chile, although recognition was incidentally involved.

Eight years later another *de facto* situation was presented to the United States Supreme Court in the case of *Keene vs. McDonough*.<sup>48</sup> The case involved the title to certain lands in Louisiana. The defendant relied for title upon a decree of a Spanish court, which decree was made subsequent to the cession to, but antedated the actual possession by the United States. The plaintiff denied the jurisdiction of such a tribunal to confirm the title in question. The court gave judgment for the defendants inasmuch as the adjudication, having been made by the Spanish tribunal after the cession, did not make such a determination void. The court said that it knew historically "that the actual possession of the territory was not surrendered until some time after these proceedings took place. It was the judgment, therefore, of a competent Spanish tribunal, having jurisdiction of the case, and rendered whilst the country, although ceded, was, *de facto*, in the possession of Spain, and subject to Spanish laws. Such judgments, so far as they affect the private rights of the parties thereto, must be deemed valid."<sup>49</sup> The court allowed the *de facto* situation to be proved by evidence.

Reference has already been made to the status of the Southern Confederacy. Numerous cases arose<sup>50</sup> in which

---

<sup>48</sup> 8 Peters, 1834, 308.

<sup>49</sup> *Keene vs. McDonough*, 8 Peters, 1834, 308 at 310.

<sup>50</sup> Perhaps the case most often cited is *Thorington vs. Smith*, 8 Wallace, 1868, 1, which involved the effect to be given to a realty contract between two residents of Alabama, where the agreement was entered into during the rebellion and the purchase price was to be paid in Confederate currency. The court felt that the facts came within the rule laid down in *United States vs. Rice*, *supra*, which involved the *de facto* situation in Castine, Maine, during the War of 1812, and decided accordingly.

its juristic status was involved, especially as regards the effect of acts which bore the sanction or approval of the *de facto* government or governments.<sup>51</sup> In these decisions the courts discussed the *de facto* character of the Confederacy. They described it as a government of paramount force. A number of these cases are listed in the note.

One of the most important cases was that of *The Home Insurance Company*.<sup>52</sup> A suit was brought by a Georgia insurance company, incorporated under the laws of that state during the rebellion, in the United States Court of Claims, for the recovery of the proceeds from the sale of cotton captured by the military forces of the Union during the war. The government attacked the validity of the incorporation, but the court held that it had a sufficiently valid existence to enable it to maintain the suit in question.

The court felt that "whatever act of the legislature of a rebel state did not tend to further or support the rebellion," or to defeat the just rights of citizens, "but related merely to the domestic affairs of the people of the state as a community," aside from the connection of that people with the rebellion, was a valid act by a *de facto*, though unlawful, government, which must be sustained in the courts of the United States.<sup>53</sup>

On appeal the Supreme Court affirmed the decision of the Court of Claims. It observed that any other doctrine would "work great and unnecessary hardship upon the people of those states, without any corresponding benefit to the citizens of other states, and without any advantage to the national government."<sup>54</sup> In the instant case the court regarded the

<sup>51</sup> *United States vs. Insurance Co.*, 22 Wallace, 1875, 99; *Mauran vs. Insurance Co.*, 6 Wallace, 1867, 1; *Delmas vs. Insurance Co.*, 14 Wallace, 1871, 661.

<sup>52</sup> 8 Ct. of Cl., 1872, 449.

<sup>53</sup> *Ibid.*, 450.

<sup>54</sup> *U. S. vs. Insurance Co.*, 22 Wall., 1875, 99. Other cases are: *Ford vs. Surget*, 97 U. S., 1878, 594; *Ketchum vs. Buckley*, 99 U. S., 1878, 188; and *Baldy vs. Hunter*, 171 U. S., 1898, 388.



*de facto* government as one of paramount force. The court held that the acts in question were valid. The attitude of the Court of Claims in this case appears to have been in accord with the position taken by the Supreme Court. The case can hardly be squared with its recent decision in *Rossia Insurance Company vs. United States*, discussed *supra*.

It has been remarked that this alternative has much merit in it. However, Sir Robert Phillimore in the case of *The Charkieh* put this alternative in bad repute.<sup>55</sup> This was an action instituted on behalf of the Netherlands Steamship Company against the steamship *Charkieh* for damages arising out of a collision in the river Thames. Subsequent to the arrest of the vessel His Highness, Ishmail Pacha, Khedive of Egypt, filed an application to restrain further proceedings in the suit on the ground that *The Charkieh* was a public vessel and therefore immune from process. From these pleadings the learned judge observed that the important question was the international status of the Khedive of Egypt. Very scanty evidence was presented at the hearing of the case.

The counsel for the Khedive insisted that it was improper to offer evidence upon such a question. They insisted that the court should take "official cognizance" <sup>56</sup> of his foreign status, and that the court should obtain such information as it considered necessary from the Foreign Office.

At the trial of the case Sir Robert Phillimore, of the Admiralty and Ecclesiastical High Court, with reference to the question before his court, said:

"I have endeavored to inform myself, and have had recourse to the following sources of information:

"1. The general history of the government of Egypt.

"2. The firmans which contain the public law of the Ottoman Empire on this subject.

"3. The European treaties . . .

---

<sup>55</sup> 1873 L. R. 4 A. & E. 59.

<sup>56</sup> Evidently the learned judge meant judicial notice.



"4. The answer which the Foreign Office has furnished to an inquiry which I thought it my duty to make."<sup>57</sup>

Judge Phillimore felt that it was necessary to refer to the past as well as to the then current political history of Egypt in order to determine whether the country had possessed the character of an independent state at any time since the Mohammedan conquest. He entered into a minute examination of the history of the country from the conquest by Amer, General of the Caliphs, in 638 A.D. down to 1873.<sup>58</sup>

On the evidence he felt that the Khedive had failed to establish his immunity from suit as a sovereign prince, "according to the criteria of sovereignty required by the reason of the thing, and by the usage and practice of nations as expounded by accredited writers upon international jurisprudence." The court rendered judgment against the vessel. In this case we find the most elaborate and detailed examination of evidence and historical facts to determine the status of a foreign sovereign that is to be found in all the reported English and American cases.

The case of *The Charkieh* came under the review of the Court of Appeal twenty years later, 1893, and was overruled on all major points, and more particularly on the question of the ability of a court to receive evidence in order to determine the juristic status of a recognized foreign government.<sup>59</sup> The Sultan of Johore had been residing in London under the assumed name of Albert Baker, under which name he had entered into a marriage contract. In an action for breach of promise of marriage the Sultan of Johore, *alias* Albert Baker, set up his sovereign immunity as a bar to the suit. The court held that it had no jurisdiction over an independent foreign sovereign, unless he submitted to the jurisdiction.<sup>60</sup>

<sup>57</sup> 1873 L. R. 4 A. & E. 59 at 74.

<sup>58</sup> *Ibid.*, at pp. 75-100.

<sup>59</sup> *Mighell vs. Sultan of Johore*, 1894, L. R. 1 Q. B., p. 149.

<sup>60</sup> Submission cannot take place until the jurisdiction is invoked.

In speaking of the letter from the Colonial (Foreign) Office regarding the status of the Sultan, Lord Esher said that "it was argued that the judge ought not to have been satisfied with that letter, but to have informed himself from historical and other sources as to the status of the Sultan of Johore. It was said that Sir Robert Phillimore did so in the case of *The Charkieh*. I know he did; but I am of opinion that he ought not to have done so."<sup>61</sup> When once there is the authoritative statement of the executive department as to the status of another sovereign, such statement is conclusive on the courts. Lord Justice Kay was of the same opinion.<sup>62</sup>

It thus appears from the attitude taken by the Court of Appeal in *Mighell vs. Sultan of Johore*<sup>63</sup> that the judgment of Sir Robert Phillimore in *The Charkieh*<sup>64</sup> was unwarranted by the facts of the case. A determination had previously been made by the Foreign Office which was ignored, or at least submerged by other evidence, by Judge Phillimore. Sound policy dictates that he should have regarded his court as bound by its decisions: it was before the court in the form of a special communication. Lord Esher was right in saying that "such statement is conclusive on the court."

In overruling *The Charkieh* the Court of Appeal<sup>65</sup> did not deny the right of the court to weigh facts in order to determine the juristic status of a *de facto* situation. Rather, it denies the right of the courts independently to determine

<sup>61</sup> *Mighell vs. Sultan of Johore*, *op. cit.*, p. 158.

<sup>62</sup> "The status of a foreign sovereign is a matter of which the courts of this country take judicial cognizance—that is to say, a matter which the Court is either assumed to know, or to have the means of discovering, without a contentious inquiry as to whether the person cited is or is not in the position of an independent sovereign. Of course the court will take the best means of informing itself on the subject, if there is any kind of doubt, and the matter is not as notorious as the status of some great monarch such as the Emperor of Germany. . . . If Her Majesty condescends to state to one of Her Courts of Justice, that an individual cited before it is an independent sovereign, I think that statement must be taken as conclusive." *Ibid.*, pp. 161–162.

<sup>63</sup> 1894, L. R. 1 Q. B., 149.

<sup>64</sup> 1873, L. R. 4 A. & E. 59.

<sup>65</sup> *Mighell vs. Sultan of Johore*, *supra*.

who is the sovereign *de jure* of a particular state when the political departments of the government have already reached a decision. These two cases have been much cited, as well as miscited, in the decisions, and for that reason they have been dwelt upon at length.

It has been said by some of the writers that this third alternative was expressly repudiated by the Supreme Court of the United States in 1821 by its reversal of the decision of the Circuit Court in the case of *La Concepcion*.<sup>66</sup> This is hardly correct, for Mr. Justice Story, who delivered the opinion for the Supreme Court, expressly stated that if the facts had been the same as they were in the Circuit Court, the decision would have been affirmed. On appeal new facts were presented and the decision was reversed on the basis of these new facts and not on the law of the case. The Supreme Court did not address itself to the opinion of the lower court. In fact the opinion is quite short: less than two hundred and fifty words in length.<sup>67</sup>

The alternative has not been overthrown. Rather there appears to be a revival of the principle in recent cases. In 1915 the New Jersey Court of Errors and Appeals said that "in the absence of any government in Mexico . . . the rule by paramount force in any particular district is provable as a matter of fact by evidence, which in this case is neither left in doubt nor subject to possible inference to the contrary."<sup>68</sup> Judge Swaze said that it was open to the courts to decide from evidence whether Huerta or Carranza was in control of a particular territory on a designated date. On the evidence submitted the court decided that the Carranza forces were in control of the Mexican state of Chihuahua and a part of the state of Coahuila "at the time the hides in ques-

<sup>66</sup> 6 Wheaton, 1819, 235 reversing 2 Wheeler Cr. C. 597.

<sup>67</sup> On the new facts the court felt that the case came within the rule laid down a few days earlier in *Bello Corrunes*, 6 Wheaton, 1821, 152, where Justice Johnson delivered a weighty opinion.

<sup>68</sup> *O'Neill vs. Central Leather Co.*, 94 At., 1915, 789 at 791.

tion were there seized and sold.”<sup>69</sup> The court held that upon seizure title to the goods passed.

In this case the court attempted to ascertain the policy of the political departments of our government. They had declared that Mexico possessed no government, whereupon the court recognized the *de facto* situation and ascertained for itself whether the Carranza faction was in *firm possession* of the section of Mexico in question before the court.

Two years later, in 1917, Mr. Justice Clarke of the United States Supreme Court, had occasion in two cases to examine the political status of Mexico from February 23, 1913, to October 19, 1915. He gave a detailed recital of the Huerta-Villa-Carranza episode.<sup>70</sup> However, it should be noted that the two cases referred to were decided subsequent to recognition by the United States and that the doctrine of retroactivity was invoked which validated the seizures in question. Therefore, even though Mr. Justice Clarke felt that “a somewhat detailed description of the political conditions in Mexico prior to and at the time of the seizure of the property in controversy” was necessary, such description was *obiter dictum*.

The principle has had its latest affirmation in *Sokoloff vs. The National City Bank*.<sup>71</sup> The action was brought against the National City Bank because of its failure under contract to repay in rubles at its Petrograd branch. Defendants pleaded that the bank had been closed and its assets confiscated by the Soviet government. Sokoloff contended that in the absence of recognition the court could take no cognizance of the Soviet regime or its acts.<sup>72</sup> The court allowed the defense to be sustained by proof of actual conditions prevailing in Russia.

<sup>69</sup> *O'Neill vs. Central Leather Co.*, 94 Atl., 1915, 789 at 791.

<sup>70</sup> *Oetjen vs. Central Leather Company*, 246 U. S., 1918, 297; *Ricaud vs. American Metal Company*, 246 U. S., 1918, 304.

<sup>71</sup> 199 N. Y. Supp., 1922, 355, 120 Misc. Rep. (N. Y.), 252.

<sup>72</sup> *Sokoloff vs. National City Bank*, 196 N. Y. Supp., 1922, 364.



Judge Ford implied that there was a distinction between acts performed as attributes of sovereignty, and acts performed as attributes of a government of superforce. He did not make the distinction clear, although without doubt it aided him in coming to a decision in the case. The plaintiff's objection was held applicable to the first type of acts only. On this ground the court allowed the National City Bank to sustain its defense by proof of the *de facto* situation prevailing in Russia.

The following language from Judge Ford is worth noting. He said: "While this court may not recognize the Soviet Government as sovereign, and therefore possessing power to confiscate property or debts, as must be done in respect of a foreign state which has been recognized either *de facto* or *de jure*, it does not follow that we must assume a state of anarchy in Russia. True, by legal fiction, for some purposes which appertain more particularly to the other, the 'political,' branches of the government than to the judiciary, we must continue to assume that the old Imperial Government is the only sovereign government in Russia.

"I can see no valid objection to permitting the defendants to allege and prove upon the trial the actual conditions prevailing in that great country. Indeed we know as a matter of common knowledge that there is a government there which has been functioning in some fashion for five years or more, and that it is not the Imperial Government of the Czars. Facts are facts, in Russia as elsewhere."<sup>73</sup> This dictum constitutes a beacon light in the maze of superfluous and irrelevant dicta which have issued from the courts in those cases involving the non-recognition of Soviet Russia.<sup>74</sup>

In summary we find that the courts are often urged to acknowledge *de facto* situations in the adjudication of private

<sup>73</sup> *Sokoloff vs. National City Bank*, 199 N. Y. Supp., 1922, 355 at 359.

<sup>74</sup> The majority of these cases have been reserved for treatment in the chapter dealing with recognition and legal capacity.



rights, although incidentally the political question of recognition is involved. If the political departments have taken a fixed attitude toward a *de facto* government or state, the course for the courts is clear. But if the attitude of the political departments is not clear, or if the litigation turns upon the recognition issue, the courts should attempt to determine the attitude of those departments, as a matter of courtesy if for no other reason. In the absence of an attitude, either favorable or unfavorable, some of the courts have regarded "the ancient state of things as remaining unaltered," while others have taken the unusual position of denying outright the existence of state life.

Other courts have taken it upon themselves to determine from the evidence submitted whether a government or a state does in fact exist. They have been able to do it without encroaching upon the functions of the political departments. Yet, lest their ingenious views should tempt the unwary into unwise and fatal practices, the courts in all such cases have deemed it proper to remark that the situations under consideration were *de facto*.

Judged by *O'Neill vs. Central Leather Co., supra*, *Oetjen vs. Central Leather Co., supra*, and *Sokoloff vs. National City Bank, supra*, the courts are finding it more and more desirable to concede semi-sovereign attributes to unrecognized governments in recognized states. It may well be that the cases will work themselves out along this line. An arbitrary distinction! Well, yes, but no more arbitrary than the distinction between incorporated and unincorporated territories recognized in the *Insular Cases*, or the anemic distinction in the case of individual rights created by the United States Supreme Court in *The Civil Rights Cases*.

Eventually the courts may find it desirable to attribute to an unrecognized *de facto* government the characteristics of internal sovereignty, and perhaps allow it to appear in the courts of non-recognizant states and ask protection for its

property and public interests. Certainly, in cases involving only matters of private right it is not only possible, but highly desirable that the courts take cognizance of *de facto* situations, without in any way encroaching upon the functions of the political or policy determining branches of the government.

## CHAPTER V

### RETROACTIVE EFFECT OF RECOGNITION

In the preceding chapters it has been pointed out that recognition is vested in those departments of our government which, by the constitution and laws, are entrusted with the conduct of foreign affairs. Once a determination has been made, or an attitude has been taken, by those departments it is conclusive and binding upon the courts.

They take judicial notice of such determination. In cases of doubt they may address an independent inquiry to the foreign office of the recognizant state. However, in some cases they have found it necessary to take cognizance of *de facto* situations, and if it involved no determination of policy they have adduced the juristic status of the state in question from history, evidence, and public notoriety.

It has become the well-established rule in England and the United States that the acts of a recognized sovereign over persons or property within its jurisdiction, must be recognized by the courts of the recognizant state as valid and binding upon them as rules of decision. Once a recognized government has acted, the validity of its act cannot be assailed in the courts of recognizant states.

The rule could not well be otherwise, for such acts cannot be wrong under its sovereignty. Such acts of recognized states in dealing with their nationals, or their property, or the property of nationals of other countries within the foreign domain which entail legal consequences elsewhere, such as the nationalisation decrees of Soviet Russia, may or may not be regarded as justiciable by the courts of recognizant states. But, as the courts have frequently said, "every sover-

eign state is bound to respect the independence of every other sovereign state.”<sup>1</sup> The courts of one country should not sit in judgment on the acts of the government of another state done within its own territory, since to do so would doubtless embarrass the diplomatic departments of the government, and “vex the peace of nations.”<sup>2</sup> This has been held to be true regardless of whether the authority in question performed the acts as the recognized representative of a *de facto* or a *de jure* government.<sup>3</sup>

This position was taken by Mr. Chief Justice Fuller in *Underhill vs. Hernandez*.<sup>4</sup> In the course of his opinion he said that the principle could not be confined to lawful or recognized governments, or to cases where redress could manifestly be had through public channels. The immunity of individuals from suits brought in foreign tribunals for acts done within their own states, in the exercise of governmental authority, whether as civil officers or military commanders, “must necessarily extend to the agents of governments ruling by paramount force as matter of fact.” Where a civil war prevails, that is, where the people of a country are divided into two hostile parties, who take up arms and oppose one another by military force, “generally speaking foreign nations do not assume to judge of the merits of the quarrel. . . . If actual war has been waged, acts of legitimate warfare cannot be made the basis of individual liability.”<sup>5</sup>

<sup>1</sup> *Underhill vs. Hernandez*, 168 U. S., 1897, 250 at 252.

<sup>2</sup> This attitude appears to have been first assumed in *Hamilton vs. Accessory Transit Company*, 26 Barbour (N. Y.), 1857, 46. See also *Murray vs. Vanderbilt*, 39 Barbour (N. Y.), 1863, 140; dictum in *Williams vs. Bruffy*, 96 U. S., 1878, 176. Perhaps the most important decision, the one most frequently cited, is *American Banana Co., vs. United Fruit Co.*, 213 U. S., 1909, 347 where, in an action for treble damages under the Sherman Act, the Supreme Court refused to pass judgment upon the validity of certain acts of confiscation performed by the then recognized Costa Rican authorities.

<sup>3</sup> *O'Neill vs. Central Leather Co.*, 87 N. J. L. 552, 94 Atlantic, 1915, 789; affirmed, with additional facts in 246 U. S., 1918, 297.

<sup>4</sup> *Op. cit. supra*, pp. 252-253.

<sup>5</sup> In this case, Hernandez was in command of a revolutionary army in

An interesting, yet rather absurd, set of facts was presented to the courts for adjudication in *The American Banana Company vs. The United Fruit Company*<sup>6</sup> in 1909. The American Banana Company alleged that its competitor, the United Fruit Company, in order to monopolize the exportation of bananas to the United States, subsequent to the revolt of Panama, conspired with the officials of Costa Rica, and induced the authorities to seize certain lands and properties which rendered the banana plantation of the American Banana Company in Panama worthless. At a later date a Costa Rican court declared title to be in a person from whom the United Fruit Company took title.

Both businesses being incorporated in the United States, the American Banana Company sued the United Fruit Company for treble damages under the national anti-trust laws. The Supreme Court held that jurisdiction is *prima facie* territorial, and the mere fact that the Sherman Act declared against "every combination" in restraint of interstate and foreign trade did not mean that our courts could exercise jurisdiction over conspiracies in other sovereign countries. Mr. Justice Holmes pointed out that such acts as those in question, performed by a recognized foreign government

---

Venezuela when an engagement took place with the government forces. It resulted in the defeat of the government forces and the occupation of Bolivar by Hernandez. Underhill was living in Bolivar at the time, where he carried on a machinery repair business. Prior to the occupation by Hernandez, Underhill had constructed a water system for the city. At the time of occupation Underhill applied for a passport to leave the city. It was refused by Hernandez with a view to coerce him to operate the waterworks system and his repair shops for the benefit of the revolutionary forces. The revolutionary forces were unrecognized at the time. Subsequently Underhill was given a passport, and the revolutionary forces acting under Hernandez were recognized by the United States as the legitimate government of Venezuela. Upon coming to the United States Underhill sued Hernandez in the Federal Courts to recover damages caused by the refusal to grant the passport, for alleged confinement, assaults and affronts of Hernandez's soldiers. The Circuit Court, Circuit Court of Appeals, and the Supreme Court, all gave judgment for the defendant. The Supreme Court affirmed the judgment of the Circuit Court of Appeals in saying "that the acts of the defendant were the acts of Venezuela, and as such are not properly the subject of adjudication in the courts of another government."

<sup>6</sup> 213 U. S., 1909, 347.



within its own territory, cannot have their validity assailed in an American court.

Even though the acts complained of were unethical, or even uneconomic as then regarded by the Sherman Act, yet the plantation was within the *de facto* jurisdiction of Costa Rica. That state took and kept possession of it by virtue of its sovereign power, and a seizure by a state is not a thing that can be complained of elsewhere in the courts.

In answer to the plaintiff's contention that the property seized was not within the jurisdiction of Costa Rica, but was within the jurisdiction of Panama, Mr. Justice Holmes said that such a fact, if it was one, did not matter in the least; sovereignty is pure fact. The fact had been recognized by the United States and was assented to by Panama.<sup>7</sup>

Each sovereign in its acts is presumed to be acting lawfully, and it would be a contradiction in terms to say that within its jurisdiction it is unlawful to persuade a sovereign power to bring about a result that it declares by its conduct to be desirable or proper. Foreign courts cannot admit that the influences were improper. "It makes the persuasion lawful by its own acts. The very meaning of sovereignty is that the decree of the sovereign makes law."<sup>8</sup> For these reasons the court refused the relief asked for. If a remedy was to be had, the appeal must be made to the political departments of the government and not to the judiciary.

In a subsequent case the court held that the principle is equally applicable to the property of American nationals, subsequently brought within the jurisdiction of the courts. In *Oetjen vs. Central Leather Company*,<sup>9</sup> wherein it was contended that the ownership of certain confiscated hides within the jurisdiction of the court at the time of the suit should be adjudicated under the law of the recognizant state,

---

<sup>7</sup> *American Banana Co. vs. United Fruit Co.*, 213 U. S., 1909, 347 at 357-358.

<sup>8</sup> *Kawwananokoa vs. Polyblank*, 205 U. S., 1906, 349 at 353.

<sup>9</sup> 246 U. S., 1918, 297.

Mr. Justice Clarke said that "the principle that the conduct of one independent government cannot be successfully questioned in the courts of another is as applicable to a case involving the title to property brought within the jurisdiction of a court, such as we have here, as it was held to be to the cases cited,<sup>10</sup> in which claims for damages were based on acts done in a foreign country; for it rests at last upon the highest considerations of international comity and expediency."<sup>11</sup> The justice gave as his concluding reason that, "to permit the validity of the acts of one sovereign state to be re-examined by the courts of another would certainly 'imperil the amicable relations between governments and vex the peace of nations.'"<sup>12</sup>

The doctrine of exemption from judicial review of acts of a recognized foreign government extends to its legislative and executive acts. The immunity is predicated upon the acts having been confined within the proper limits of the jurisdiction of the recognized government. In the case of judgments of foreign courts, we find that these are not treated as obligatory. Their recognition rests on comity. The judgments of foreign tribunals are always qualified by the universally accepted rule that the court rendering the judgment shall have had jurisdiction of the case.<sup>13</sup>

There is an exception to the general rule that the courts of a recognizant state will not sit in judgment on the acts of a recognized state. The exception extends to cases of prize captures made under the authority of a foreign state,<sup>14</sup> which prize captures were in violation of the neutrality of the recognizant state, into which the prize is carried. The excep-

<sup>10</sup> Referring to *American Banana Company vs. United Fruit Company*, *supra*.

<sup>11</sup> *Oetjen vs. Central Leather Company*, *supra*, pp. 303-304.

<sup>12</sup> *Ibid.*

<sup>13</sup> In *Rose vs. Himely* Mr. Justice Marshall held that a sale made under a judgment of a court in Santo Domingo did not divest the American owner of title because the court did not have initial jurisdiction.

<sup>14</sup> 7 Wheaton, 1822, 283.

tion was established in *The Santissima Trinidad* in 1822.<sup>15</sup> Since then it has not been seriously questioned.

As a consequence of the doctrine of judicial immunity the English and American courts have held that once recognition is accorded it is to be regarded as retroactive in effect. It follows from this that acts performed by the recognized state within its jurisdiction prior to recognition must be regarded as lawful by the courts of the recognizant states. In the past such acts have included the conversion of the assets of the overthrown government, the levying of forced contributions to perfect military operations or carry out legislative decrees, and the nationalization of private businesses within the jurisdiction of the recognized state.

The doctrine became entrenched in the law by 1878. In that year, Mr. Justice Field in *Williams vs. Bruffy*,<sup>16</sup> in discussing generally the status of a *de facto* state set up by separation from a parent state, said that if such a state fails to establish itself permanently, all its acts perish with it. If it succeeds and becomes recognized, "its acts from the commencement of its existence are upheld as those of an independent nation. Such was the case of the state governments under the old Confederation on their separation from the British crown. Having made good their Declaration of Independence everything they did from that date was as valid as if their independence had been at once acknowledged."<sup>17</sup>

This was the view which had been taken by the Supreme Court in a number of cases involving certain acts passed by

---

<sup>15</sup> Mr. Justice Story, who delivered the court's opinion said: "In each case . . . the illegality of the capture is the same; in each, the duty of the neutral is equally strong to assert its own rights, and to preserve its own good faith, and to take from the wrongdoer the property he has unjustly acquired and reinstate the other party in his title and possession which have been tortiously divested." 7 Wheaton, 1822, 283, at 351.

<sup>16</sup> 96 United States, 1877, 176. The case involved certain confiscatory acts of the government of the Confederate States. The Court held that the acts were void.

<sup>17</sup> *Ibid.*, at 186.

the state legislatures immediately after the Declaration of Independence. As early as 1796, in the course of an opinion<sup>18</sup> concerning confiscation acts of the Virginia legislature, Mr. Justice Chase, had occasion to say that from the 4th of July, 1776, the American states were *de facto*, as well as *de jure*, in the possession and actual exercise of all the rights of independent government, and that he had ever considered it as the established doctrine, that their independence originated from, and commenced with, the Declaration of Congress, on the 4th of July, 1776. He said that no other period could be fixed on for its commencement, and "that all laws made by the legislatures of the several states, after the Declaration of Independence, were the laws of sovereign and independent governments."<sup>19</sup>

His opinion was in accord with the view which the English courts had already taken of the situation. A pronouncement appears in the English cases as early as 1788,<sup>20</sup> wherein the court does not specifically state, but implies, that the recognition of 1783 was retrospective in effect.

The earliest English case arose out of a law enacted by the Georgia legislature shortly after the Declaration of Independence, attainting the former Tory governor of the Georgia colony and confiscating his property. The Georgia law was set up as a defense in the English courts by an English royalist in a suit by one of his American creditors. The Lord Chancellor recognized the defense as valid, inasmuch as the American creditor, under the Georgia law, could have satisfied his debt out of the confiscated property. In touching the validity of the Georgia decree of attainder and confiscation the court said that it might be a question for private speculation whether such a law made in Georgia was a wise or an improvident one, whether a barbarous or civilized in-

---

<sup>18</sup> *Ware vs. Hylton*, 3 Dallas, 1796, 199.

<sup>19</sup> *Ibid.*

<sup>20</sup> *Wright vs. Nutt*, 1 H. Bl., 1788, 136, 126 English Reprints 83.

stitution. "But here we must take it as the law of an independent country," said the court, "and the laws of every country must be equally regarded in courts of justice here, whether in private speculation they are wise or foolish."<sup>21</sup>

In the United States the issue of retroactivity appears to have been only incidentally involved in the case of *Kennett vs. Chambers*.<sup>22</sup> In this case the appellants insisted that recognition validated a void contract made prior to recognition. The court refused to accept their view. Rather it held that the agreement having been void when it was made, that is, in violation of the neutrality laws of the United States, it could derive no force from subsequent recognition. It is to be noted that *Kennett vs. Chambers*<sup>23</sup> involved an act of parties within and subject to the jurisdiction of the United States. On this ground it is to be distinguished from the case of *The Itata*,<sup>24</sup> which is sometimes cited as contrary to this view.

Such still appears to be the rule. Recognition is not retroactive in that it validates criminal acts committed by persons subject to the jurisdiction of the recognizant state. It is retroactive only as regards acts committed within the jurisdiction of the recognized state.

It will be recalled that in *United States vs. Trumbull*<sup>25</sup> the sole question was whether a vice-consul of Chile who possessed an unrevoked *exequatur* must still be recognized by

---

<sup>21</sup> *Wright vs. Nutt*, 126 English Reprints, 83 at 89. It appears that the case of *Ogden vs. Folliott*, 1790, 3 T. R. 726, 100 English Reprints, 825, affirming judgment in 1 H. Bl. 123, 126 English Reprints, 75, on a similar set of facts wherein the court refused to accord recognition to a bill of attainder which intended a confiscation of the property of certain Tories in New Jersey during the American Revolution, is contra. It is generally cited as such. However, if the *Ogden* case has not been overruled the doctrine therein enunciated has been confined to its narrowest limits. See *Phillipa vs. Eyre*, 1870, L. R. 6 Q. B. 27, 10 Best & S. 1,004, 40 L. J. Q. B. N. S. 28, and *Huntington vs. Attrill*, 1893, 68 L. T. N. S. 326.

<sup>22</sup> 14 Howard, 1852, 38.

<sup>23</sup> The agreement was entered into at Cincinnati.

<sup>24</sup> 56 Fed., 1893, 505. There was also a substantial difference in the evidence in the two cases.

<sup>25</sup> 48 Fed., 1891, 94.



the courts as the accredited representative of his country, entitled to the usual immunities of his office, notwithstanding that the government which sent him had been overthrown, and an apparently successful revolutionary government inaugurated in its place. Judge Ross of the District Court felt that such an individual was still the accredited representative of the country and entitled to the usual immunities. The revolutionary government of Chile had been recognized by the United States, but prior to the rendition of the decision. This recognition validated the unrevoked *exequatur* in the hands of the Chilean vice-consul.

At the conclusion of his opinion Judge Ross gave an additional reason why he did not think that the vice-consul should be compelled to attend as a witness. The offenses with which the defendants stood charged were violations of the neutrality laws of the United States, and consisted in the giving of aid to those who then constituted the established and recognized government of Chile. Having succeeded and become recognized, the acts of that government from the commencement of its existence must be upheld as those of an independent state. To require the representative of that government to appear and give testimony against those alleged to have aided its establishment would not only be contrary to the principle upon which neutrality laws are based, but "would strongly tend to give grave offense to the government now recognized by the United States," said the court, "and with which this government, happily, is at peace."<sup>28</sup>

However, the reasoning of Judge Ross appears to have been *obiter dictum*. The court had already deemed itself to be bound by the determination of the President, which *ipso facto* disposed of the case, and which was sufficient ground on which to allow the motion of the vice-consul. Furthermore, it appears that Judge Ross himself regarded

---

<sup>28</sup> *United States vs. Trumbull*, 48 Federal, 1891, 94 at 98.

it as a dictum, for eleven days later in rendering judgment on the initial facts, which had given rise to the decision just referred to, he held that the neutrality laws had not been violated inasmuch as the statute under which Trumbull stood accused prohibited only such military expeditions or enterprises "as originate within the limits of the United States, and are to be carried on from this country."<sup>27</sup> Judge Ross held the evidence insufficient to warrant a conviction, and instructed the jury to find a verdict of not guilty.<sup>28</sup> It thus appears that Judge Ross himself admitted that what he had said in the first case of *United States vs. Trumbull* was *obiter dictum*. These cases do not overrule the previously considered case of *Kennett vs. Chambers*,<sup>29</sup> as has been sometimes stated.

The earliest case in which express reference, at the hands of a court, is made to the doctrine of retroactivity arose in New York in the case of *Murray vs. Vanderbilt*, decided in 1863.<sup>30</sup> The Accessory Transit Company had been created, largely by American capital, under the laws of Nicaragua. It appeared that the Vanderbilt interests furnished a large part of the capital. The purpose of the railway was to facilitate transportation across the country, primarily for the benefit of Americans rushing to the California gold fields. In February, 1856, the Rivas-Walker government, revolutionists in control of the government, annulled the charter of the railway corporation and declared the company abolished. The property of the corporation was to be seized and held subject to a board of inquiry.<sup>31</sup>

The case of *Murray vs. Vanderbilt*<sup>32</sup> involved the title to

---

<sup>27</sup> *United States vs. Trumbull*, 48 Fed., 1891, 99 at 103.

<sup>28</sup> *Ibid.*, p. 108.

<sup>29</sup> 14 Howard, 1852, 38.

<sup>30</sup> 39 Barbour, 1863, 140.

<sup>31</sup> For a case which was decided six years earlier, which denied a petition by a stockholder to have the company declared insolvent and a receiver appointed, inasmuch as considerable property was situated in the United States, see *Hamilton vs. Accessory Transit Company*, 26 Barbour, 1857, 46.

<sup>32</sup> 39 Barbour, 1863, 140.

certain assets of the corporation. The case rested upon a determination of the validity and effect to be given by the New York courts to the decree of dissolution and seizure recited before. The Rivas-Walker government had been recognized by the United States, but subsequent to the decree which remained in force at the time of the litigation.

The court felt bound to recognize the validity of the Nicaraguan decree, but held that the law did not dissolve the corporation for the purposes of the suit. Mr. Justice Ingraham, speaking for the court, said that from the time of the recognition of the Rivas-Walker government, in May 1856, if not from the time of its inception, the decree must be considered as a valid act of the government of Nicaragua. He was of the opinion "that where the decree was not void at the time of its passage (February 1856), the recognition of the government in May (1856), would have a retroactive effect, so as to give validity in this country to the decrees made previously, so far as to enable the court here to act on it as affecting the charter."<sup>33</sup> The principle was discussed at length by the New York court.

However, strictly speaking, the principle of retroactivity did not become fixed as one of the legal effects of recognition until 1918. From 1917 to 1920 a series of cases involving the success and belated recognition of the Carranza government in Mexico came before the state and the federal courts. In these cases the courts definitely recognized the rule. Prior to this time the principle can be regarded only as a dictum.

The most frequently cited of all these cases are *Oetjen vs. Central Leather Company*<sup>34</sup> and *Ricaud vs. American Metal Company*.<sup>35</sup> These two cases came before the Supreme Court of the United States on appeal in 1918. The former was a

---

<sup>33</sup> The New York court differentiated the instant case from *Ogden vs. Folliet*, 1790, 3 T. R. 726, 100 English Reprints, 855 and *Kennett vs. Chambers*, 14 Howard, 1852, 38.

<sup>34</sup> 246 U. S., 1918, 297

<sup>35</sup> 246 U. S., 1918, 304.

suit in replevin. It involved the title to a large quantity of hides. The plaintiff claimed as the assignee of the Mexican owner from whom they had been taken by General Villa as a military contribution. General Villa had sold them to the predecessor in title of the defendant.

The Supreme Court refused to sit in judgment on the validity of the acts of Villa, who had acted on instructions from General Carranza, inasmuch as the United States had recognized the Carranza faction as the *de facto* government of Mexico in 1915, and as the *de jure* government in 1917. The court declared that when a government which originates in revolution or revolt is recognized by the political departments of our government as the *de jure* government of the country in which it is established, such recognition is retroactive in effect and validates all the action and conduct of the government so recognized from the commencement of its existence.<sup>36</sup>

In the companion case, *Ricaud vs. American Metal Company*,<sup>37</sup> similar facts were before the same court. The case involved the validity of the seizure of certain lead ore. The ore had been seized as a military contribution by one General Pereyra, a commander of a brigade of the Constitutionalist Army of Mexico of which Carranza was then First Chief, and sold by him to the predecessors in title of the defendant who attempted to ship it into the United States. The plaintiffs, who claimed under purchase from the original American owners, sought to enjoin the collector of customs at El Paso, Texas, from delivering the bullion to the defendants.

The Supreme Court held it to be a lawful seizure, since the recognition of Carranza by the United States was retroactive in effect and validated "all the actions of the Carranza

---

<sup>36</sup> *Williams vs. Bruffy*, 96 U. S., 1877, 176 at 186, and *Underhill vs. Hernandez*, 65 Federal 577, affirmed in 168 U. S., 1897, 250 at 253 cited as being in accord. They are in accord only so far as dicta are concerned.

<sup>37</sup> 246 U. S., 1918, 304.

government from the commencement of its existence . . . and the action of General Pereyra complained of must therefore be regarded as the action, in time of civil war, of a duly commissioned general of the legitimate Government of Mexico." <sup>38</sup>

A similar dispute which arose out of another revolutionary decree of General Villa, acting under General Carranza, was the case of *Terrazas vs. Holmes*.<sup>39</sup> The case involved the seizure of a herd of cattle of a Mexican owner, resident in Mexico. The decree was later affirmed by General Carranza. The Texas court followed the *Oetjen* and *Ricaud* cases in holding that an action of replevin, by the owner at the time confiscation in 1913, would not lie against an American owner who had purchased the cattle in Mexico from the agents of the revolutionary government and subsequently brought them to the United States. The court held that recognition of the Carranza government by the United States subsequent to the confiscation, validated the seizure, and that it was not open to re-examination in the Texas courts. The court found that it had only the power to determine whether General Villa had acted in a certain manner and did not have the power to question the validity of the seizure.<sup>40</sup> The doctrine of retroactivity was expressly recognized and applied by the Texas courts.

Another case before the state courts involved the seizure of a large number of bags of coffee. The coffee was appropriated in 1914 by agents of the Carranza government. It was then sold to an American importing firm at New Orleans. The original owners from whom it was appropriated sequestered and sought to recover it, but the

<sup>38</sup> *Ricaud vs. American Metal Company*, 246 U. S., 1918, 304 at p. 310.

<sup>39</sup> 225 S. W., 1920, 848.

<sup>40</sup> See *Terrazas vs. Holmes*, 227 S. W., 1920, 206, decided the following year by the Texas courts, in which it appears that a part, 350 head, of the same herd was involved and the court reached a like conclusion. An English translation of Villa's decree is reproduced in this companion case; affirmed 275 S. W., 1925, 396.



Louisiana court upheld the title of the American firm, saying that it was precluded from making an independent inquiry as to the validity of the appropriation because of the subsequent retroactive effect of the recognition of the Carranza forces by the United States.<sup>41</sup>

Another case in the state courts involving the validity of certain acts of the recognized Carranza forces was *Molina vs. Commission Reguladora*.<sup>42</sup> The plaintiff, a citizen of the Mexican state of Yucatan, sought to recover for the conversion of certain farm produce. The defendant claimed that he had bought the property in question from the lawful authorities in Mexico who had sequestered and sold it by virtue of confirmed authority from General Carranza prior to the recognition of his government by the United States as the *de jure* government of Mexico. The New Jersey court refused to allow a recovery because of the retroactive effect of recognition. The court cited the *Oetjen* and *Ricaud* cases with approval. It held that these cases governed in the instant case, and that it was unnecessary to inquire whether the action of the Yucatan authorities against the plaintiff's property was legal or not.<sup>43</sup> Recognition validated the acts in question: the courts refused to sit in judgment on the acts of a recognized foreign state.

---

<sup>41</sup> *Monte Blanco Real Estate Corporation vs. Wolvin Line*, 145 La., 1920, 563, 85 Southern 242. The court followed *Ricaud vs. American Metal Co.*, in its decision. But see *De La O vs. Consolidated Kansas City Smelting and Refining Co.*, 202 S. W., 1918, 1,027, where a Texas court gave judgment for the plaintiff in an action for the conversion of the proceeds of certain ores seized by the Mexican authorities. The court held that the defendant was estopped, under the terms of his contract, from asserting his title based on the confiscation in Mexico. The court noted that it could take judicial notice of the fact that General Carranza was the head of the military government of Northern Mexico at the time the ore was imported (prior to recognition by the United States), and that such government could seize and sell the ores for military purposes and that valid title would pass to the purchaser. However, the case can be distinguished because the court felt that the evidence in the case did not show that the officer making the seizure and sale was a duly authorized officer of such a military government.

<sup>42</sup> 104 Atl., 1918, 450.

<sup>43</sup> For the denial of a previous motion in the instant case, see 103 Atlantic, 397.

The rule that our courts will not sit in judgment on the acts of recognized states when they are performed within their jurisdiction did not deprive the American courts of jurisdiction to adjudicate the Mexican confiscation cases just considered. The rule requires only that when it appears that a foreign government has acted in a given manner on the subject matter of the litigation, the details of the action, or the merit of the results cannot be questioned in the courts of a recognizant state. The action of the recognized government must be accepted by the courts as a rule for their decision. "To accept a ruling authority and to decide accordingly is not a surrender or abandonment of jurisdiction but an exercise of it."<sup>44</sup>

In each of the American cases the recognition involved was *de jure* recognition and not *de facto* recognition. In these cases both *de facto* and *de jure* recognition had been accorded and the courts did not differentiate between the two types. The American decisions do not decide the retroactive effect of *de facto* recognition. This question was first presented to the English courts.

The first case in which this issue was presented to the English courts was *Aksionariornoye Obschestvo vs. James Sagor & Company*.<sup>45</sup> The plaintiff was a British corporation, engaged in the manufacture of plywood, doing business under the laws of Russia during the reign of the Czar. In June, 1918, the Soviet government nationalized all private industries of this type and confiscated their assets.

On March 16, 1921, the British government concluded a trade agreement with the Soviets through the agency of M.

---

<sup>44</sup> *Ricaud vs. American Metal Co.*, *op. cit.*, p. 309; *Molina vs. Comision Reguladora*, *op. cit.*, pp. 452-453. For a case involving a modification or limitation of the rule enunciated in the *Oetjen* and *Ricaud* cases, see *Cottam & Co., vs. Comision*, 149 La., 1921, 1026, 90 So., 392, where the Mexican authorities did not have absolute authority over the property in question. Another case in point is *Mitchell vs. Banco de Londres y Mexico*, 192 App. Div. N. Y., 1920, 720, 183 N. Y. Supp. 446.

<sup>45</sup> 1921 L. R. 3 K. B. 532, reversing 1921 L. R. 1 K. B. 456 on a slightly different set of facts. This case is commonly cited as *Luther vs. Sagor*.

Krassin. It was by virtue of this agreement that the Krassin delegation continued its operations in London. The Krassin delegation, prior to the consummation of the trade agreement, 1920, had sold a part of the plaintiffs' confiscated plywood to the defendants, an American firm. When the goods began to arrive and the defendants noticed the trade marks of the plaintiffs thereon, they immediately wrote to inquire whether the plaintiffs desired to purchase the goods, and if not, whether they desired that they remove the trade mark before offering them for sale. Upon receipt of this notice the plaintiffs instituted suit for the recovery of the plywood.

The lower court gave judgment for the plaintiffs on the ground that the Soviet regime being unrecognized at the time of the litigation, December, 1920, the acts of the Soviets amounted to pure robbery. On appeal the evidence showed that the seizure and sale of the plywood were the acts of the Soviet government which had been subsequently recognized as the *de facto* government of Russia. The Court of Appeal held that such recognition bound the English courts and that the recognition was retroactive in effect and prohibited any inquiry by the English courts into the confiscatory decree. However, the court felt that the decision below was correct. The Court of Appeal relied strongly on the American precedents.

The counsel for the plaintiffs sought to evade the effect of the decisions of the United States courts on the retroactive issue. They argued that the governments considered by the American courts were recognized by the United States as the governments *de jure*<sup>40</sup> while the Soviet government was recognized only as a *de facto* government. The counsel contended that in the case of *de jure* recognition such recognition might relate back to the acts of a state, committed prior to recognition, and validate them *ab initio*, but that in the

---

<sup>40</sup> As in the *Oetjen* and *Ricaud* cases in the United States which concerned by the recognition of Mexico.

case of *de facto* recognition the rule did not apply. The court refused to accept the purported distinction for the purposes of the instant case. Lord Justice Bankes, admitted that for "some purposes, no doubt, a distinction can be drawn between the effect of the recognition by a sovereign state of the one form of government or the other, but for the present purposes" in his opinion, no distinction could be drawn. The government of England having "recognized the Soviet government as the government really in possession of the powers of sovereignty in Russia, the acts of that government must be treated with all the respect due to the acts of a duly recognized foreign state."<sup>47</sup>

Lord Justices Warrington and Scrutton also read judgments in the case and covered the point in question. The former quoted with approval from *Oetjen vs. Central Leather Company* and said: "It is true that in this case the court is applying the principle to a government recognized as the *de jure* government, but . . . there is no difference for the present purpose between a government recognized as such *de jure* and one recognized *de facto*. In the latter case, as well as in the former, the government in question acquires the right to be treated by the recognizing state as an independent sovereign state, and none the less that our government does not pretend to express an opinion on the legality or otherwise of the means by which its power has been obtained." And after differentiating between *de jure* and *de facto* recognition, he qualified his statements by observing that he expressed "no opinion on the question whether the retroactive effect of recognition is so wide as to cover every act of the recognized government from the commencement of its existence." He considered it unnecessary to express such an opinion because the facts in the instant case did not require it.<sup>48</sup> Lord Justice Scrutton, in his judg-

---

<sup>47</sup> *Luther vs. Sagor*, 90 L. J. R. K. B. 1921, 1202 at 1212.

<sup>48</sup> *Ibid.*, at 1216.



ment, concurred in the opinions expressed by the other justices, but felt that to have recognition retroactive from "the commencement of its existence" required "very careful consideration" and definition at the hands of the court.<sup>49</sup>

The counsel for the plaintiffs anticipated that the court might deny their contention and follow the American precedents on retroactivity. For this reason, they argued that the nationalization decrees of the Soviet government were so immoral, and so contrary to the principles of justice recognized in England, that the English courts were bound to disregard them. The court labeled the argument "a bold proposition" and denied the point. The court stated that it was "asked to ignore the law of the foreign country under which the vendor acquired his title, and to lend its assistance to prevent the purchaser dealing with the goods." "Even if it was open to the courts of this country to consider the morality or justice of the decree of June, 1918, I do not see how the courts could treat this particular decree otherwise than as the expression by the *de facto* government of a civilized country of a policy which it considered to be in the best interest of that country. It must be quite immaterial for present purposes that the same views are not entertained by the government of this country, are repudiated by the vast majority of its citizens, and are not recognized by our laws," said Lord Justice Bankes.<sup>50</sup>

On the same point of "immorality" Lord Justice Scrutton observed that all individuals must contribute to the welfare of the British state. At that time several British citizens were compelled to contribute to the state more than half of their incomes through an income-tax and super-tax, and a large proportion of their capital in death duties, with the fear of a capital levy over their heads at all times. Under these circumstances the court was not in a position to declare that a foreign state was immoral which considered that to

---

<sup>49</sup> *Luther vs. Sagor, op. cit.*, p. 1219.

<sup>50</sup> *Ibid.*, at 1213.



invest individual property in the State as representing all the citizens was the best form of proprietary right.

When the initial case was first tried in December 1920, Justice Roche, on information received from the Foreign Office, held that the Soviet government had not been recognized by the English government, and that the defendants acquired no title to the property. He accordingly gave judgment for the plaintiff. On appeal it was held that the decision was right according to the information then received from the Foreign Office, but that, inasmuch as after the commencement of the action, further information had been received from the Foreign Office to the effect that England had recognized the Soviet government as the *de facto* government of Russia, the defendants acquired title and were entitled to judgment. The court held that *de facto* recognition was equally as retroactive as *de jure* recognition.

The precedent established in *Luther vs. Sagor* has been followed by the English courts in several subsequent cases. In July, 1924, it was raised in the case of *The Juniper*.<sup>51</sup> A steamship company which had its head office in Paris claimed possession of a vessel, anchored in the English port of Dartmouth, and proceeded *in rem* against the vessel. After the writ had been served on the vessel the representative of the Union of Socialist Soviet Republics put in an appearance and moved to set aside the writ on the ground that the ship was their property, by virtue of a nationalization decree of 1918; that they were a recognized foreign independent state, and that they declined to sanction the institution of the proceedings. Lord Justices Bankes and Scrutton, who rendered judgments in the case of *Luther vs. Sagor*, agreed that *de facto* recognition had been accorded the Soviet Republic, and that under such circumstances, "the court had no jurisdiction to entertain proceedings against the property or to investigate the assertion that the ship was the property of the Russian sovereign."<sup>52</sup>

<sup>51</sup> 1924, 40 T. L. R. 815.

<sup>52</sup> *The Juniper*, *op. cit.*, p. 816.

The case of *White, Child, and Beney vs. Eagle S. & B. Dominions Insurance Company*,<sup>53</sup> involved the decrees of the Soviet government nationalizing banks and their assets. The Court of Appeal held that effect must be given to these decrees. The decision appeared to be a harsh one. The defendant insurance company had guaranteed the plaintiff bankers against loss or damage "directly caused by fire, rioters, civil war, revolutions, rebellions, military or usurped power" but provided that no claim was to attach for "confiscation or destruction by the government of the country in which the property" was situated. In accordance with *Luther vs. Sagor*<sup>54</sup> the learned judges held that the retroactivity rule made the loss fall within the exception clause of the insurance policy, even though the government had been granted *de facto* recognition only.

It appears that if the litigation had been consummated prior to the recognition, recovery would have been allowed. The court created an arbitrary distinction: it did not acknowledge that facts are facts, revolutions are revolutions, in Russia as elsewhere, regardless of recognition. It is this precise, arbitrary distinction into which those courts which follow the retroactivity fiction are driven, to which reference was made in the preceding chapter.

This anomalous situation faced the English Court of Appeal again in 1925, in the much discussed case of *Banque Internationale de Commerce de Petrograd vs. Goukassow*.<sup>55</sup> The plaintiff bank was incorporated in 1869 according to the law of Russia. It had a branch in Paris and a branch in London. The defendant was a customer of the Paris branch. Under the terms of a special agreement made with the Paris branch in 1912, he engaged the bank to purchase shares in other companies for him, he paying only twenty per cent of the value and the bank advancing the other eighty

<sup>53</sup> 1922, 127 L. T. N. S. 571, 38 T. L. R. 616.

<sup>54</sup> 1921, L. R. 3 K. B. 532.

<sup>55</sup> 1923, L. R. 2 K. B. 682.

per cent, as security for the repayment of which the shares were deposited with the bank. The net result of these transactions was that prior to the commencement of the Russian revolution the defendant was indebted to the Paris branch to the extent of 44,000 pounds. By the decrees of the Soviet government made in 1917 and 1918 all private banks in Russia, including the plaintiff bank, were extinguished and ceased to exist. Great Britain at the time recognized the Soviets as the *de facto* government of Russia, while France, at the time of the litigation, neither recognized it as the *de facto* nor the *de jure* government.

In 1920 the plaintiff, who continued to carry on the business of the Paris branch, sued the defendant in the English courts. He found his action blocked by the retroactive effect of the *de facto* recognition,<sup>56</sup> while at the same time, the Soviet regime being unrecognized by France, recovery could have been had in the French courts.<sup>57</sup>

---

<sup>56</sup> In commenting on the law applicable to this anomalous situation Lord Justice Bankes said that "if the view of this court is correct that the parent bank in Russia has ceased to have any legal existence, this curious result must follow, namely, that in this country which has recognized the Soviet government, the London branch of the Russian bank has no legal existence and cannot sue, yet in France, which has refused to recognize that government, the Paris branch of that bank has never ceased to have a legal existence and can in France carry on its business and sue and be sued just as it could before the Soviet government was established. The question of law which has to be decided is whether the Paris branch can maintain the present action in this country. From one point of view it may seem absurd to suggest that a plaintiff who, in the eye of the law of this country, has ceased to have any legal existence can maintain an action in this court. On the other hand, it is clear that had the present action been commenced in France it would have been maintainable there. If maintainable there, then why not here? If the question was one merely between capacity to contract and procedure, I should have hesitated long before deciding that the present action was not maintainable, and that the *lex fori* rather than the *lex loci contractus* was the law to be applied. The objection is that the party seeking to maintain the action is, in the eye of our law, no party at all, but a mere name only, with no legal existence. Having decided that this contention is correct, it follows in my opinion, that the action is not maintainable, and the appeal must be dismissed."

<sup>57</sup> Lord Justice Atkin said: "This plaintiff, though alive in France, is dead here. No doubt this case will serve as a solemn warning to the French branches of Russian corporations to beware of allowing assets to pass into a country where, as soon as they reach its territorial limits, they either become the property of the Soviet Government or become *bona vacantia*. With that

It can hardly be said that these two decisions<sup>58</sup> determine the retroactive extraterritorial effect of all nationalization decrees of a recognized *de facto* government. The implication of the cases is that if it appears certain to the courts that the true intent of the decree is to nationalize all corporations, upon recognition, such decrees must be given full effect upon the corporate existence of the corporations outside of Russia.<sup>59</sup> Obviously a nationalization decree by a recognized *de facto* government cannot terminate the existence of a foreign corporation doing business in such state, although the recognized *de facto* government might forbid its doing business within the state.<sup>60</sup> Such a derivative right flows from the fundamental right of independence.

A number of the decisions of the courts deal with the exact time from which the immunity from judicial review of governmental acts dates. No uniform rule has been agreed upon by the courts. The American cases hold that it is retroactive as to all acts from the "commencement of the existence" of the new government. Some of the English judges have questioned whether such a rule is the proper one.

In *Murray vs. Vanderbilt*,<sup>61</sup> the decree annulling the charter in question was made on February 18, 1856, while recognition by the United States was not accorded until the

---

I have nothing to do. We must, as has been said, adhere to principles. On principle the plaintiff is dead, and the action must be dismissed." 1923, L. R. 2 K. B. 682 at 693. The House of Lords set aside the judgment of the Court of Appeal. However, the reversal turned upon a difference of opinion as to the effect intended by the Soviet decrees. 1925, L. R. A. C. 150.

<sup>58</sup> *Banque Internationale de Commerce de Petrograd vs. Goukassow*, 1923, L. R. 2 K. B. 682; *Russian Commercial and Industrial Bank vs. Comptoir de Mulhouse*, 1925, L. R. A. C. 112; same case in Court of Appeal, 1923, L. R. 2 K. B. 630.

<sup>59</sup> See *Canada Southern Railway Co., vs. Gebhord*, 109 U. S., 1883, 527, where Mr. Chief Justice Waite said that wherever a corporation goes for business it carries its charter, as "that is the law of its existence," and whatever disabilities are placed on the corporation at home it retains abroad, and whatever legislative control it is subjected to at home must be recognized and submitted to by those who deal with it elsewhere. To evade the harshness of the rule it appears that the courts have allowed them to continue as *de facto* corporations for a temporary period to wind up their affairs.

<sup>60</sup> *Sokoloff vs. National City Bank*, 239 N. Y., 1924, 158, 145 N. E. 917.

<sup>61</sup> 39 Barbour (N. Y.), 1863, 141 at 146.



following May. Mr. Justice Ingraham was of the opinion that our "recognition of the government in May would have a retroactive effect, so as to give validity" to the decree made the preceding February. However, it was not necessary for the court to make a pronouncement on the precise date of retroactivity inasmuch as, at the time of recognition in May, the decree still remained in force, and was enforced by the Nicaraguan government. Hence it was only necessary that from the time of the recognition of the government in May that the decree should have been considered as a valid act of the Nicaraguan government.

The issue was more complicated in the cases involving the Villa-Carranza revolt in Mexico. It appears from the cases, in fact the courts regarded it as a matter of general history, that General Carranza inaugurated his revolution and proclaimed the organization of his so-called constitutional government under "The Plan of Guadalupe" on the twenty-sixth of March, 1913. Madero, President of the Republic of Mexico, was assassinated on February 23, 1913, whereupon Huerta had declared himself Provisional President of the Republic.<sup>62</sup>

The city of Torreon in the State of Coahuila, in which the hides in question in *Oetjen vs. Central Leather Company* were located, was occupied by Villa, Commander of the North under Carranza, on October 1, 1913. The exact date of the seizure does not appear from the case but it does show that the hides in question were sold in Mexico by order of Villa on January 3, 1914. Mr. Justice Clarke, speaking for the court, held that our recognition of the Carranza government as the *de facto* government of the Republic of Mexico, on October 19, 1915, and as the *de jure* government on August 31, 1917, was sufficiently retroactive to validate the seizure in question which occurred during the latter part of 1913.

---

<sup>62</sup> These facts appear in the cases dealing with the Mexican question.



In *Ricaud vs. American Metal Company*<sup>63</sup> the seizure had been made in September, 1913, although the lead bullion in question had been purchased by an American firm the preceding June. The court in its opinion held that recognition was retroactive and validated "all the acts of the Carranza government from the commencement of its existence." Mr. Justice Clarke intimated that such recognition would not validate acts committed between February 23,<sup>64</sup> and March 26, 1913. The justice prefaced his remarks on the retroactive effects, by stating that the revolution inaugurated by General Carranza against General Huerta proved successful and was recognized. Later in the opinion he regarded the seizure "as the action, in time of civil war, of a duly commissioned general of the legitimate government of Mexico."<sup>65</sup> No case has arisen involving the validity of acts of the Huerta faction from February 23, 1913, to March 26, 1913.<sup>66</sup>

---

<sup>63</sup> 246 U. S., 1918, 304.

<sup>64</sup> The date of the assassination of Madero.

<sup>65</sup> *Ricaud vs. American Metal Co.*, 246 U. S., 1918, 304 at 309.

<sup>66</sup> Although the chief ground relied upon in the *Oetjen* and *Ricaud* cases was recognition by the United States, yet the court did not decide that the absence of political recognition precluded giving effect to the confiscations. Also it is to be noted that the Supreme Court affirmed the decision of the New Jersey Court of Errors and Appeals which had been handed down prior to political recognition. The decision of the New Jersey court was to the effect that a confiscation or seizure for war purposes by a *de facto* government passes title to the goods. *O'Neill vs. Central Leather Company* 87 N. J. L., 1915, 552, 94 Atl. 789. This rule has been followed even in a court of a country wherein the revolution occurred, *Lemkuhl vs. Kock*, Transvaal L. R., 1903, T. S. 451. For a case contra see, *Cia. Minera Ygnacio Rodriguez Ramos S. A. vs. Bartlesville Zinc Co.* (1925, Texas), 275 S. W. 388, where the court relied on the dictum in *Williams vs. Bruffy*, 96 U. S., 1877, 176 at 186, that the validity of confiscation by an insurgent government depends entirely upon its survival, since the legal effects of "all such acts perish with it." Actually, however, *Williams vs. Bruffy* was not in point because the court in the *Williams* case had in mind a rule only for the courts of the country in which the revolution had occurred and the court based its discussions largely on domestic policy rather than on rules of International Law. The rule laid down by the New Jersey court in the *O'Neill* case recognizes the realities of such situations. Our courts need not give legal effect to all acts of unrecognized *de facto* governments. It should not give effect to those acts which would materially weaken our foreign policy. *Sokoloff vs. National City Bank*, 239 N. Y., 1924, 156, 145 N. E. 917; *Russian Reinsurance Company vs. Stoddard*, 240 N. Y., 1925, 149, 147 N. E. 703.

The problem of retroactivity received its first consideration at the hands of the English courts in the case of *Luther vs. Sagor*.<sup>67</sup> Here the different rules applicable to recognized and unrecognized governments were perspicuously illustrated by the reversal of the judgment of the court of the King's Bench, following recognition of the Soviets, by the Court of Appeal. Also, the doctrine as applied to cases of *de facto* recognition, did not become an undoubted and indisputable principle until the rendition of this case.<sup>68</sup> Each of the Lord Justices of the Court of Appeal treated the subject at length in his judgment.

In the initial case of *Luther vs. Sagor*,<sup>69</sup> the court held, December 21, 1920, on the information from the Foreign Office before it, that His Majesty's Government had not recognized the Soviet government. On appeal the following May two additional letters from the Foreign Office, dated respectively April 20, and 22, 1921, were before the judges. The letter of April twentieth was from the Under-Secretary of State for Foreign Affairs in reply to a letter dated April twelfth from the appellant's solicitors concerning the status of the Soviet regime. In answer to the inquiry the Under-Secretary of State wrote: "I am to inform you that His Majesty's Government recognize the Soviet Government as the *de facto* Government of Russia."<sup>70</sup> The letter of April twenty-second was in reply to a request for information as to whether England recognized the Provisional Government of Russia, and as to the period of duration, and the extent of its jurisdiction. The letter of April 22 contained, *inter alia*, the statement that the Provisional Government came into power on March 14, 1917, that it was recognized by England as the then existing government of

<sup>67</sup> 1921, L. R. 3 K. B. 352.

<sup>68</sup> For a contrary inference see editorial on *Oetjen vs. Central Leather Company* in 86 Central Law Journal, 259.

<sup>69</sup> 1921, L. R. 1 K. B. 456.

<sup>70</sup> 90 L. J. R. K. B. (1921) 1202 at 1211.

Russia, and that the Constituent Assembly remained in session until December 13, 1917, when it was dispersed by the Soviet authorities. With these facts before him Lord Justice Bankes inquired: "What is the effect of the recognition . . . in April 1921, . . . and how far back if at all does that recognition extend?"<sup>71</sup>

The counsel for the respondents insisted that no case had gone so far as to say that the recognition of a *de facto* government was retrospective. In turn, the counsel for the appellants relied upon the implication of the American precedents.<sup>72</sup> Lord Justice Bankes examined these and observed that they were "weighty opinions," but the learned American judges did not cite any authority for their propositions. The American judges treated the matter as one resting on principle.<sup>73</sup>

The Lord Justice considered the views put forward by the learned American judges as sound, but he felt that "there may be cases in which the courts of a country . . . may have to consider at what stage in its development the government so recognized can . . . be said to have 'commenced its existence.'" This was not such a case. Lord Justice Bankes felt that, relying upon the communications from the Foreign Office, as of April 20, and 22, he should treat the Soviet government, which England had then recognized as the *de facto* government of Russia, "as having commenced its existence at a date anterior to any date material to the dispute" between the parties to the appeal. Judged by the letter of April 22, from the Foreign Office, wherein it appeared that the "Soviet authorities dispersed the then Constituent Assembly on December 13, 1917," he felt "that the Soviet Government assumed the position of the sovereign

---

<sup>71</sup> *Ibid.*, 1211-1212.

<sup>72</sup> *Williams vs. Bruffy*, *supra*; *Underhill vs. Hernandez*, *supra*, *Oetjen vs. Central Leather Company*, *supra*.

<sup>73</sup> *Luther vs. Sagor*, *op. cit.*, p. 1211.

government and purported to act as such.”<sup>74</sup> This satisfied the Lord Justice “that the decree of June 20, 1918, the seizure of the plaintiff’s goods in January, 1919, and the subsequent sale of them to the defendants in August, 1920, were all acts of the Soviet Government,” which then had been recognized, and which must be accepted by the English courts as such.<sup>75</sup>

Lord Justice Warrington, in his judgment, did not enter into as exhaustive an examination as Lord Justice Banks. He conceded that, “on principle, recognition would be retroactive” although he was not certain as to the extent of the doctrine. On the extent of retroactivity he said that he had not been able to find any authority in English law on the point, but considered it necessary to examine the American precedents. In concluding his judgment on the point he was of the opinion that the Soviet government exercised sovereignty in Russia at the time of the decree of seizure on June 20, 1918. He felt that the court was entitled to infer that the government recognized as the Soviet government existed prior to the date of the decree, and has been the government of Russia ever since.<sup>76</sup>

Lord Justice Scrutton, in speaking of the information before the court from the Foreign Office, said: “We have from the Foreign Office a recognition of the Soviet Republic in 1921, as the *de facto* government, and a statement that in 1917, the Soviet authorities expelled the previous government recognized by His Majesty. It appears to me that this binds us to recognize the decree of 1918, by a department of the Soviet Republic, and the sale in 1920, by the Soviet Republic of property claimed by them to be theirs under that decree, as acts of a sovereign state, the validity of which cannot be questioned by the Courts of this country.”<sup>77</sup> In other

<sup>74</sup> *Luther vs. Sagor*, *op. cit.*, p. 1212.

<sup>75</sup> *Ibid.*, pp. 1212-1213.

<sup>76</sup> *Ibid.*, p. 1216.

<sup>77</sup> *Ibid.*, p. 1218.

words, the Lord Justice considered recognition as retroactive "since the beginning of 1918."<sup>78</sup>

The Lord Justice considered it "unnecessary to express a final opinion whether and to what extent recognition of a *de facto* government is retrospective to previous acts and times." The recognition of a government as a *de facto* government in one year, "does not necessarily recognize that, from the first moment when some of the individuals supporting its cause began to resist or to attack the then established government, it was the *de facto* government." The difficulty of knowing at what time and over what area a struggling faction becomes a government *de facto* may well arise. Lord Justice Scrutton felt that the courts "cannot answer that question by knowing that some years later the Sovereign recognized it as the government *de facto* over a particular area. When that question is to be answered, the court must ask the Sovereign for information."<sup>79</sup> In the instant case the learned justice felt that the information from the Foreign Office was sufficiently definite to enable them to say that *de facto* recognition of the Soviet Republic was retrospective to the beginning of 1918. The learned justice doubted whether recognition validated everything "from the commencement of its existence."<sup>80</sup>

It thus appears that in this particular case, the courts looked to the political departments to stipulate the date to which recognition was to be retrospective. In *Luther vs. Sagor*,<sup>81</sup> the English courts interpreted the communications from the Foreign Office in this light. The implication of Lord Justice Scrutton's judgment is that the date should be fixed by the political departments for the Foreign Office, through its diplomatic and consular records, by its correspondence and state papers, is in a much better position to

<sup>78</sup> *Luther vs. Sagor*, *op. cit.*, p. 1219.

<sup>79</sup> *Ibid.*

<sup>80</sup> *Ibid.*

<sup>81</sup> 1921, L. R. 3 K. B. 532.



ascertain the commencement of the existence of a government than the courts.

It would not be advisable to have the political departments specify the date of origin of a stipulated government.<sup>82</sup> If the courts are in doubt they should make inquiry of the Foreign Office. The Foreign Office should present all the data to the court. In all cases the courts must interpret the communications from the Foreign Office and decide whether the recognized government was in existence at the time the acts in question were performed.

The courts created the fiction of retroactivity to evade the necessity of sitting in judgment on the acts of recognized foreign governments. Yet, by the creation of the fiction they have put the judiciary at variance with the political departments. Recognition is a political function. The courts regard it as retroactive in effect. This means that the English courts regarded all acts of the Soviet Republic as valid from "the beginning of 1918" while more than a year later,<sup>82a</sup> Mr. Lloyd George, the official spokesman for the political departments, had said: "The Bolshevik government has committed crimes against the allied subjects, and has made it impossible to recognize it even as a civilized government."<sup>83</sup> Two years later, in 1921, the English courts, through the fiction of retroactivity, expressly repudiated the statements of the ex-Prime Minister. The courts of the United States did exactly the same thing with reference to Mexico, by regarding as legal all the acts of the Caranza government "from the commencement of its existence," in spite of the vehement protests of President Wilson during its formative period.<sup>84</sup>

---

<sup>82</sup> Lord Justice Bankes in *Luther vs. Sagor* felt that the Foreign Office should specify the date of origin. Later he reversed his judgment on this point. See the interesting case of *White, Child and Beney, Ltd. vs. Simmons*, 1922, 127 L. T. R. 571.

<sup>82a</sup> April 16, 1919.

<sup>83</sup> Speech delivered before the House of Commons.

<sup>84</sup> "Annual Message to Congress," *New York Times*, December 3, 1913.

The legal effects of the withdrawal of diplomatic relations upon the doctrine of retroactivity do not appear from the cases. Although England has severed relations with the Soviet Republic it does not appear that the question has been raised in any of the reported cases.<sup>85</sup> In time the issue may prove to be a very potent one.

---

<sup>85</sup> See comment, *Legal Consequences of the Break with Russia*, 71 Sol. Jl., 1927, 504.

## CHAPTER VI

### RECOGNITION AND LEGAL CAPACITY

One of the most baffling problems which has been presented to the English and American courts has been that of the inability of the representatives and creatures of foreign states to protect themselves through the courts of non-recognizant states. This issue has been pushed into the limelight in the United States in recent years by a number of decisions denying the ability of the unrecognized Soviet Republic to sue or to protect itself from suit in the American courts.

By their decisions the courts have rendered it impossible for unrecognized *de facto* governments to protect their representatives or property through the courts of a non-recognizant state. In the absence of recognition an unrecognized government cannot sue. Likewise it may not claim immunity from suit. Recently the New York courts have shifted their position and held that immunity attaches in the absence of recognition. At the same time they hold that such *de facto* governments may not sue in their courts. In a few instances where the suit has been brought in the name of the state, rather than in the name of the government of the state, pending suits have been entertained or continued.

At the present time it is well settled that a foreign sovereign may sue in the courts of a foreign recognizant state. The issue was raised in the English courts early in the nineteenth century,<sup>1</sup> although no positive language on the issue was forthcoming from the courts: it is there by implication

---

<sup>1</sup> *City of Berne vs. Bank of England*, 9 Vesey Jr., 1804, 347, 32 English Reprints, 636; *Dolder vs. Bank of England*, 10 Vesey Jr., 1805, 353, 32 English Reprints, 881; *Dolder vs. Huntingfield*, 11 Vesey Jr., 1805, 284, 32 English Reprints, 1097.

only. The question was raised, seemingly, for the first time, in the reported cases in the United States in 1810, in *The King of Spain vs. Oliver*.<sup>2</sup> In that year Mr. Justice Washington refused to inquire, upon a motion, whether Ferdinand VII, King of Spain, could institute a suit, the government of the United States, at the time, not having acknowledged him as king. The case did not settle the issue. The court referred to English cases which had been cited but the report does not disclose the names of the cases.<sup>3</sup>

The first case in which the courts enunciated the principle as a positive rule of law was *Hullett and Company vs. King of Spain*.<sup>4</sup> The King of Spain sought to compel the defendants in England to deliver up certain moneys which belonged to certain Spanish nationals. The defendants objected that the recognized King of Spain could not sue in the English Courts.<sup>5</sup> The House of Lords held that the suit could be prosecuted and gave judgment for the King of Spain. The Lords held that a foreign sovereign could sue in both law and equity. Lord Redesdale in his judgment, said there was no doubt on the point.<sup>6</sup> Changing the tone of his judgment somewhat he observed that "there is no ground for the notion, that a foreign sovereign cannot sue in the

<sup>2</sup> 2 Washington C. C. 429.

<sup>3</sup> *Ibid.*, at 432.

<sup>4</sup> 1 Dow & Clark, 169, 6 English Reprints, 488. For the same case in the lower courts see *King of Spain vs. Machado*, 1827, 4 Russ. 225, 560. The case has been cited with approval in *United States of America vs. Wagner*, 1867, L. R. 3 Eq. 724, L. R. 2 Ch. 582; *Duke of Brunswick vs. King of Hanover*, 1844, 6 Beav. 13, 21, 37; *Mighell vs. Sultan of Johore*, 1894, 1 Q. B. 149; and *South African Republic vs. La Compagnie France Belge du Chemin du Fer du Nord*, 1897, 2 Ch. 487.

<sup>5</sup> Machado had received the money as the agent of the King of Spain from the French government and had deposited it with Hullett and Company of London. Machado refused to deliver up the money. Machado having left England the King of Spain instituted this suit to compel Hullett and Company to pay the money into court. They demurred that the foreign sovereign could not sue in the English equity courts. The court overruled the demurrer and allowed a recovery by the King of Spain. This was affirmed by the House of Lords in the instant case.

<sup>6</sup> Lord Redesdale said "I have no doubt but a foreign sovereign may sue in this country, otherwise there would be a right without a remedy. He sues here on behalf of his subjects, and if foreign sovereigns were not allowed to do that, the refusal might be a cause of war." 1 Dow & Clarke 169 at 175.

courts of this country. It appears to me clear that he can sue, and it would be monstrous injustice if he could not."<sup>7</sup> Subsequent cases have reaffirmed the point so that today in English law the statement that a foreign sovereign may sue in the courts of a recognizant state is accepted as commonplace.<sup>8</sup> The same principle is accepted as law in the United States,<sup>9</sup> the outstanding case being that of *The Sapphire*.<sup>10</sup> This case was before the Supreme Court of the United States in 1871.

The importance of *The Sapphire* has been revived in recent years in those cases involving the right of the Soviet Republic to maintain actions for state property in this country. For this reason, it is necessary to note carefully the facts of the case and words of the court.

It appears that in December, 1867, the French transport *Euryale* was damaged in a collision in the harbor of San Francisco. Thereupon a libel was filed in the American courts in the name of Napoleon III. The lower courts gave judgment in favor of the libellant, but an appeal was taken to the Supreme Court of the United States. Meanwhile Napoleon III had been deposed, and at the trial before the Supreme Court in February, 1871, it was urged that the deposition of Napoleon III, in whose name the suit had been instituted, had abated the action. The court unanimously upheld the right to continue the suit although it found it necessary to reverse the decree of the lower courts on the facts.

Mr. Justice Bradley, who wrote the opinion of the court,

<sup>7</sup> 1 Dow & Clarke 169 at 176.

<sup>8</sup> See also *Emperor of Brazil*, 5 Dowling, 1837, 522; *Emperor of Austria vs. Day & Kossuth*, 1861, 3 De Gex, Fisher & Jones, 174; *Queen of Portugal*, 7 Clarke & Finelly, 1840, 466; *King of Greece*, 6 Dowling's Practice Cases, 12; *De Haber vs. Queen of Portugal*, 1851, 17 Q. B. 169.

<sup>9</sup> *King of Prussia vs. Kuepper's Administrator*, 22 Mo., 1856, 550, where the court held that the King of Prussia, who had become subrogated to rights of the owners of embezzled property against the embezzling officer, could maintain an action against such an absconded officer in the Missouri courts.

<sup>10</sup> 11 Wallace, 1870, 164.



said that "a foreign sovereign, as well as any other foreign person, who has a demand of a civil nature against any person here, may prosecute it in our courts. To deny him this privilege would manifest a want of comity and friendly feeling."<sup>11</sup> It should be noted that the justice felt that the right flowed from comity or courtesy. He did not regard capacity to sue as a matter of absolute right.<sup>12</sup> A change in the representative of the national sovereignty worked no change in the rights of the national sovereignty. "The next successor recognized by our government is competent to carry on a suit already commenced and receive the fruits of it."<sup>13</sup>

There has been no difficulty as regards the capacity of a recognized state to sue. But a state cannot in and of itself institute a suit. It can act only through authorized agents: government. Here lies the crux of the difficulty for the courts. Granted that a recognized government within a recognized state may sue, may an unrecognized government within a recognized state institute an action in the court of a non-recognizant state? The early decisions evade the issue. They register a doubt on the point.<sup>14</sup> There are dicta denying the right in a number of the cases. The courts have said that the power to sue depends upon recognition, which

<sup>11</sup> *The Sapphire*, 11 Wallace, 1871, 164 at 167.

<sup>12</sup> *Republic of Mexico vs. De Arrangois* (N. Y., 1855) 11 How. Pr. 1, affirmed the following year in 5 Duer 634; *Republic of Honduras vs. Soto*, 112 N. Y., 1889, 310, 19 N. E. 854; *United States of America vs. Wagner*, 1867, L. R. 2 Ch. App. 582, for similar views. *Columbia Government vs. Rothschild*, 1826, 1 Sim. 94, raised the question as to whether a suit could be maintained in the name of a government, and apparently answered it in the negative. More recently the federal courts allowed a suit to be instituted in the name of the Imperial Russian Government, although the pleadings were later amended and the name of the plaintiff changed to the State of Russia. *State of Russia vs. Lehigh Valley Railway Co.*, 293 Federal, 1919, 133; *Ibid.*, 293 Federal 135; *Ibid.*, 21 Federal 2d., 1927, 396. There are some cases which hold that a suit may be brought by an individual agent if he is duly authorized to sue by his own government. *The President of the United States of America vs. Drummond*, 33 Beav., 1864, 449; *Peel vs. Elliott*, 16 How. Pr. (N. Y. 1858), 481; *Yzuierdo vs. Clydebank, etc.*, 1902, L. R. A. C. 524.

<sup>13</sup> 11 Wallace, 1871, 164 at 168.

<sup>14</sup> *King of Spain vs. Oliver*, 1819, Federal Case No. 7, 814; *The Hornet*, 1870, Federal Case No. 6,705; *City of Berne vs. Bank of England*, 1804, 9 Vex. Jr. 348; *Taylor vs. Barclay*, 1828, 2 Sim. 213.

implies that in the absence of recognition no action can be brought.<sup>15</sup> The courts have followed this implication: only one case being contra.

There is no doubt on the point in the New York courts. Whenever the question has been raised in that state the courts have uniformly held that "the test of a foreign sovereignty to sue" is its recognition by our own government.<sup>16</sup>

The outstanding case of recent years is *Russian Socialist Federated Soviet Republic vs. Cibrario*.<sup>17</sup> In 1918, the Cinematographic Committee of the Commissariat of Public Instruction of the Soviet government paid over to one Dr. William C. Huntington, the United States commercial attaché in Petrograd, one million dollars which was to be deposited in the National City Bank of New York. The defendant<sup>18</sup> entered into an agreement with the Soviet Republic to supply the plaintiff government with films for educational purposes. Defendant had the privilege of drawing on the account at the National City Bank.

It was rumored that through the creation of dummy corporations the defendant had converted approximately half of the initial deposit to his personal account. Thereupon the Soviet government brought an action for an accounting in the New York court.<sup>19</sup> The court dismissed the action.

<sup>15</sup> *The Sapphire*, 11 Wallace, 1871, 164; *Republic of Honduras vs. Soto*, 19 N. E. 845; *Republic of Mexico vs. De Arrangois*, 11 How. Pr. (N. Y.), 1855, 1; *Emperor of Austria vs. Day*, 3 De G. F. J. 217.

<sup>16</sup> *Republic of Mexico vs. De Arrangois*, 12 N. Y. Sup. Ct. 1855, 634 at 637; *Republic of Honduras vs. Soto*, 112 N. Y., 1889, 310, 19 N. E. 845; *Waldes vs. Basch*, 179 N. Y. Supp. 713. Affirmed in 181 N. Y. Supp., 1920, 918. In *Yucatan vs. Argumedo*, 157 N. Y. Supp., 1915, 219 the authorities are discussed at length.

<sup>17</sup> 191 N. Y. Supp., 1921, 543.

<sup>18</sup> Defendant was the purchasing agent of Cinematographic Committee of the Commissariat of Public Instruction of the Soviet Government.

<sup>19</sup> The case was finally disposed of in 1923, 235 N. Y. Supp. 255, by the Court of Appeals. Judge Andrews wrote an opinion holding that the right to sue depended upon comity and that in the absence of comity there was no such right. "We reach the decision, therefore, that a foreign power brings an action in our courts not as a matter of right. Its power to do so is the creature of comity. Until such government is recognized by the United States, no such comity exists. The plaintiff concededly has not been so recognized. There is, therefore, no proper party before us." *Ibid.*, p. 262.

This dismissal was affirmed by the appellate division of the Supreme Court on the ground that the plaintiff government had not been recognized by the United States government. The court proceeded on the theory that the power to sue depended on recognition; without it the court could not know that the plaintiff was a government.<sup>20</sup>

The court proceeded to examine the attitude of the political departments. It found that the Committee on Foreign Relations of the United States Senate on April 14, 1920, had referred to the Soviet Republic as "a regime which has never been recognized by the government of the United States, and which in International Law has no standing as a constituted authority."<sup>21</sup> It found that the State Department had issued an official public statement to the effect that "the United States has not recognized the Bolshevist regime at Moscow as a government" and warned the public that "extreme caution should be exercised as to representations made by any one purporting to represent the Bolshevist government."<sup>22</sup> The court also noted that one Ludwig C. A. K. Martens, who purported to represent the Soviet Republic in the United States, had been deported. "All these facts appearing without contradiction," said the court, "it follows that the plaintiff, never having been recognized as a sovereignty by the executive or legislative branches of the United States government," had no capacity to sue in the courts of New York State.<sup>23</sup>

The court cited *The Penza and Tobolsk et al*<sup>24</sup> and *The*

---

<sup>20</sup> The Court said: "In the case at bar, while plaintiff claims to be a *de-facto* government, and its title and right to sue alike rest on that claim, it is unable to show any acts of recognition by the government of this country. On the contrary, the record proves that, so far as this country is concerned, the plaintiff is non-existent as a sovereign." 191 N. Y. Supp., 1921, 543 at 549 and 550.

<sup>24</sup> 277 Federal, 1921, 91.

<sup>22</sup> 191 N. Y. Supp., 1921, 543 at 550.

<sup>23</sup> *Ibid.*

<sup>24</sup> 277 Federal, 1921, 91.

*Rogdai*<sup>25</sup> as being in accord. At first glance they appear to support the general principle. Actually, however, the cases may be distinguished. In the cases of *The Penza* and *The Rogdai*, the chief issue decided by the court was whether the court should hand over property which admittedly belonged to the Russian nation to the unrecognized Soviet faction, while the State Department continued to recognize the Provisional Government. The instant case involved the right of an unrecognized faction to protect its own property brought within the jurisdiction of a non-recognizant state.

Furthermore, in the instant case the money was brought to the United States with full cognizance by the American government. Thus one may argue that in such a case, where only property rights are involved, the foreign government, though unrecognized, should be allowed to sue. In support of the rule it must be said that such a denial of the right to sue, gives the State Department additional power in its negotiations with the unrecognized nation. Certainly that much can be said in favor of the rule enunciated by the court.<sup>26</sup> The allegation that the Soviet Republic was a sovereign government was not conclusive on the court.<sup>27</sup>

In *Taylor vs. Barclay*<sup>28</sup> a bill in equity was based on an agreement which it alleged had been made in 1825 by agents of "the government of the Federated Republic of Central America, which was a sovereign and independent state, recognized and treated as such by His Majesty, the King of these realms." On demurrer, Vice Chancellor Shadwell dismissed the bill, saying that he had communicated with the Foreign Office, and was "authorized to state that the Fed-

<sup>25</sup> 277 Federal, 1920, 133. In these two cases the Soviet government requested the federal courts to attach Russian vessels which were in the ports of the United States at the time and to decree that these vessels belonged to the Soviet rather than to the Provisional authorities.

<sup>26</sup> The court refused to allow an action for the same moneys to be brought by an agent of the Soviet Republic in his individual name. *Preobazhenski et al. vs. Cibrario*, 192 N. Y. Supp., 1922, 275, 199 App. Div. 899.

<sup>27</sup> 191 N. Y. Supp. 543 at 545.

<sup>28</sup> 2 Sim. 213.



eral Republic of Central America " had not been recognized as an independent government by the government of his country.<sup>29</sup> In the absence of recognition the right to sue was disallowed.

In some instances cases have been pending at the time of the overthrow of a recognized government. In these cases the courts have recognized the distinction between a state and a government and have held that a state, once recognized, is a continuing personality, and that suits instituted on behalf of the state remain unaffected by a change in the person of the sovereign or the form of government.

This point was before the Supreme Court of the United States for the first time in the case of *The Sapphire*. The court said that the reigning sovereign represents the national sovereignty. Sovereignty is continuous and perpetual, and resides in the proper successors of the sovereign for the time being. Napoleon was the owner of the vessel *Euryale*, not as an individual, but as sovereign of France. On his deposition the sovereignty did not change, but merely the person or persons in whom it resided. The foreign state was the true and real owner of its public vessels of war. The reigning emperor, or national assembly or other actual person or party in power was but the agent and representative of the national sovereignty or its rights. "The next successor recognized by our government is competent to carry on a suit already commenced and receive the fruits of it."<sup>30</sup> The vessel always belonged to the French nation. For this reason the court allowed the suit to be continued.

This language was recently quoted with definite approval by Judge Goddard of the Federal District Court for the Southern District of New York in *Russian Government vs.*

---

<sup>29</sup> This doctrine was quoted with approval by the Supreme Court of the United States in *Jones vs. United States*, 137 U. S., 1890, 202 at 215. This method is the usual one followed by the courts in determining the exact attitude of the political departments of the government.

<sup>30</sup> *The Sapphire*, 11 Wallace, 1871, 164 at 168.



*Lehigh Valley Railway Company*.<sup>31</sup> The learned judge stated that the importance of recognizing governmental continuity, irrespective of considerations as to the existing form of a foreign government, or as to the human being in control at any particular time, is mentioned in many of the cases and text-books.

Suit had been instituted in 1918 by the then Provisional Government to recover alleged damages to the extent of \$1,675,000, occasioned by the Black Tom explosion of 1916. The State Department in a communication before the court had stated that the Provisional Government had been recognized on March 22, 1927. One Bakhmeteff served as its ambassador to the United States from July 5, 1917, until June 30, 1922, after which date the State Department considered the custody of all property of the Russian Government in this country to have vested in Mr. Serge Ughet, the financial attaché of the Russian embassy. The State Department further advised that the Soviet regime had not been recognized.

The defendants moved for a dismissal of the suit, on the ground that the Provisional Government had been overthrown and was thereby deprived of authority to continue with the prosecution. The court said that the answer was that the Provisional Government had fallen when Mr. Bakhmeteff began the suits, and they were held to have been properly begun for the reason that at that time, 1918, our government recognized him as such ambassador. The court was bound by the action of the executive department. Regardless of whether the government had fallen, if the State Department considered the "financial attaché of the Russian embassy, whose diplomatic status with this government, was

---

<sup>31</sup> 293 Federal, 1923, 135 at p. 137. This case was before the federal courts for more than nine years. It was finally disposed of in August, 1927: 21 Federal, 2d, 1927, 396. See comments in 41 *Harv. Law Rev.*, 1927, 102; 20 *Law and Banking*, 1927, 284; 13 *Cornell L. Q.*, 1928, 297; 37 *Yale L. J.*, 1928, 360.

not considered to be altered," as vested with the custody of the property of the Russian government after Mr Bakhmeteff's retirement, such determination was conclusive and binding upon the court.

No precedent for such a situation was presented to the court and after diligent research Judge Goddard confessed that he was unable to find one. He felt, however, that our government may have adopted this attitude for the express purpose of preventing what otherwise would have been a loss of right to Russia, "because of its refusal to recognize the present regime now functioning in Russia." He granted the motion to entitle the plaintiff *The State of Russia*. The case was originally styled Imperial Russian Government.

The court judicially recognized that the State of Russia survived,<sup>32</sup> regardless of the name or form of the government. The court said that the real party in interest was the State of Russia, and that Russia, the state, still lived and was a continuing entity in the contemplation of the law. An attempt was next made in 1924 to secure a writ of prohibition from the Supreme Court of the United States to prevent further proceedings in the action.<sup>33</sup> This attempt failed by a denial of the writ.

The trial was held in the spring of 1925. It resulted in a verdict for the plaintiff, whereupon an appeal was taken to the Circuit Court of Appeals for the Second District. At the beginning of the trial a motion was made on behalf of the Soviet government for the appointment of a receiver to conserve the proceeds of the action. The motion was denied by Judge Mack as prematurely made, without prejudice to its renewal at a later date. A similar motion after verdict was similarly disposed of because of the projected appeal.

At the trial before Circuit Judges Manton, L. Hand, and Swan, the same objections were urged against a continuation

---

<sup>32</sup> The change in the name of the plaintiff was consistent with Mr. Justice Bradley's opinion in *The Sapphire*, 11 Wallace, 164.

<sup>33</sup> 265 U. S., 1924, 573.

of the suit. Judge Manton, who delivered the opinion, said that "the right to recover damages for breach of this carrier's obligation became the property of the State of Russia on July 30, 1916, when the loss occurred. The government was then the Russian Imperial Government."<sup>34</sup>

The court created the important distinction between a state and its government. The court defined a state as a community or assemblage of men, and a government as the political agency through which the state acts in international relations.<sup>35</sup> The foreign state is the true or real owner of its property, and the agency the representative of the national sovereignty.<sup>36</sup>

The Circuit Court of Appeals held that the various preliminary motions to dismiss the complaint had been properly rejected because there had been no change recognized in the government or agency for Russia by the political branches of our government. Judicially the State of Russia continued.<sup>37</sup>

The distinction between the state and its government was important. Abatement of the action could be sustained only by reason of the non-existence of the state, or the renunciation by our government of the agency once accredited and recognized. The agency thus employed was obliged to institute and continue<sup>38</sup> the suit until some other government was recognized by the political departments of our government.

The state and the government are distinct legal entities. The granting or refusal of recognition to a government within a state has nothing to do with the recognition of the

---

<sup>34</sup> *Lehigh Valley Railway Co., vs. State of Russia*, 21 Federal 2d, 1927, 396, at 399.

<sup>35</sup> *State of Texas vs. White*, 7 Wallace, 1868, 700; *Cherokee Nation vs. Georgia* 5 Peters, 1861, 52; and *Foulke, International Law*, Vol. 1, pp. 62, 82, 102, and 192 cited as in accord.

<sup>36</sup> *The Sapphire vs. Napoleon III*, 11 Wallace, 1871, 164; *The Rogdai*, 278 Federal 294.

<sup>37</sup> *Lehigh Valley Railway Company vs. State of Russia*, 21 Federal (2d), 1927, 396 at 400.

<sup>38</sup> *Republic of Mexico vs. De Arangois*, 12 N. Y. Sup. Ct. 643.

state itself.<sup>39</sup> If a foreign state refuses to recognize a change in the form of government of an old state, the state does not thereby lose its recognition as an international person.<sup>40</sup> Therefore, said the Circuit Court of Appeals, the instant suit "did not abate by the change in the form of government in Russia; the state is perpetual and survives the form of its government. *The Sapphire, supra*. The recognized government may carry on the suit, at least until the new government becomes accredited" in the United States by recognition.<sup>41</sup> The court affirmed the award of the lower court. It allowed damages to the State of Russia to the extent of \$556,166.58 plus \$297,734.50 interest.

An appeal was taken to the Supreme Court of the United States. On December 12, 1927, the Supreme Court refused to review the petition for a *writ of certiorari* to the Circuit Court of Appeals, Second District.<sup>42</sup> Thereupon the Lehigh Valley Railway Company asked that the payment be made to the court, which would have the power to turn it over to the proper Russian representative. This course was adopted. It was thought to be the best way to protect the judgment debtor against possible suits by the Soviet government.

---

<sup>39</sup> "Changes in the government or the internal polity of a state do not as a rule affect its position in International Law. Monarchy may be transformed into a republic, or a republic into a Monarchy; absolute principles may be substituted for constitutional, or the reverse; but, though the government changes, the nation remains, with rights and obligations unimpaired." Moore, *Digest*, Vol. 1, p. 249.

<sup>40</sup> Oppenheim, *International Law*, Vol. 1, p. 141; Moore, *Digest*, Vol. 1, p. 298. "Recognition of a new state must not be confounded with other recognitions." Recognition of changes in government is important. But the grating or refusing of such recognition "has nothing to do with recognition of the State itself. If a foreign State refuses the recognition of . . . a change in the form of the Government of an old State, the latter does not thereby lose its recognition as an International Person, although no official intercourse is henceforth possible between the two States as long as recognition is not given either expressly or tacitly. And if recognition of a new title of an old State is refused, the only consequence is that such State cannot claim any privileges connected with the new title." I Oppenheim, p. 139.

<sup>41</sup> *Lehigh Valley Railway Company vs. State of Russia*, 21 Federal (2d), 1927, 396 at 401.

<sup>42</sup> Memorandum decision, October term, 1927, 48 *Supreme Court Rep.* . . . , advance sheets, West Pub. Company, January 15, 1928, p. 159.



Thereupon, the Lehigh Valley Railway Company tendered its check to the Federal District Court for \$984,104.62. On December 22, 1927, the money was paid by the clerk of the court to Mr. Serge Ughet, the financial attaché of the Russian embassy.<sup>43</sup>

Mr. Charles Recht, representative for the Soviet government in the United States, announced that he would file a protest. The writer is not aware of any protest having been filed. But it should be remarked, that based upon both reason and precedent, such an action would not be entertained.<sup>44</sup>

<sup>43</sup> *New York Times*, December 23, 1927.

<sup>44</sup> *The Rogdai*, 278 Federal, 1920, 294, at 296 where District Judge Dietrich in speaking of a controversy over Russian property, the vessel *Rogdai*, said: "It will be noted that fundamentally there is no controversy touching the real ownership of the transport; she belongs to Russia; no adverse claim, either public or private is involved. By Russia, of course, I do not refer to any particular political group or organization, but to the National entity or sovereignty." Did Martens or Bakhmetieff represent the National Sovereignty of Russia? "Plainly, consideration of such an issue upon the merits would of necessity draw us into the realm of international diplomacy; and it is equally plain that no useful purpose could be subserved by such an investigation. If the court assumes the right to make an original inquiry, it logically follows that it must exercise its own independent judgment upon the facts thus disclosed and reach an independent conclusion. In that view it might recognize Martens, while Washington recognizes Bakhmetieff. To state the proposition is to discredit it. True, the Russian sovereignty may speak through different representatives, and it may have business agents as well as diplomatic agents; but all must derive their authority from a single source. The National Will must be expressed through a single political organization; two conflicting governments cannot function at the same time. By the same token, discordant voices cannot express the sovereign will of the American Nation. Either the executive or the judiciary must be supreme in a given sphere.

"The question at issue is one of state: It involves international relations, and is primarily for the State Department. If, as contended . . . it be granted that a revolution has taken place in Russia, and that the Soviet Republic is in actual control, the question when, if at all, such *de facto* government shall be recognized, is a political one. It involves considerations of national policy, which are not justiciable, and touching it the voice of the Chief Executive is the voice, not of a branch of the government, but of the national sovereignty, equally binding upon all departments. . . . It is to be reiterated that we are not here concerned with the claim of a third party, either public or private, to the property in controversy, nor have we a case where the Department of State has failed to act, or where it is sought only to protect a party in actual possession. The case is one where the court is asked to take property conceded to be that of the Russian Nation from the actual possession of those whom the State Department unmistakably recognizes as the accredited agent of the Russian government, and turn it over to other persons whom that department has declined to recognize as having



The instant case differs from that of *The Sapphire* in that in the instant case the Provisional Government had ceased to function in Russia, whereas the governmental successor of Napoleon III was admittedly functioning in France. This acknowledged difference in facts did not disturb the court because in both cases the political departments had assumed an attitude. In the instant case it was negative, while in *The Sapphire* it was positive. The court took judicial notice of each determination. Both were binding on the court in its decisions.

This case establishes the doctrine that the rights and liabilities of a state are unaffected by a recognized change either in the form or personnel of its government, howsoever accomplished, whether by revolution or otherwise. "No other doctrine is thinkable, at least among nations which have any conception of international honor."<sup>45</sup> The principle applies

---

any official standing whatsoever." See also 21 Fed. (2d), 1927, 396 at 400. The only case contra is *United States of Mexico vs. National Bank of Haverhill* reported in 17 A. J., 1923, 743. Two Mexican officials fled to the United States with 140,000 pesos, which they deposited with the National Bank of Haverhill, Mass. The "Government of Mexico" secured a temporary injunction forbidding the withdrawal of the money. At the trial in May, 1923, the district attorney presented on behalf of the Attorney-General of the United States a statement from the State Department to the effect that "the Government of the United States, has not accorded recognition to the administration now functioning in Mexico, and therefore has at present no official relations with that administration. This fact, however, does not affect the recognition of the Mexican state itself, which for years has been recognized by the United States as an "international person" as that term is understood in international practice." The plaintiff moved to amend the pleadings: to substitute "United States of Mexico" for "Government of Mexico." In the absence of recognition the defendant questioned the capacity of the plaintiff to sue. Thereupon evidence was presented which showed that the Obregon government was in effective control of Mexico, that negotiations were being carried on between the states, that it had a chargé d'affaires at the Mexican Embassy building at Washington. On this evidence the court continued the injunction. Recognition was accorded the Obregon government on August 31, 1923. See *State of Yucatan vs. Argumedo*, 157 N. Y. Supp., 1915, 219, where the New York Supreme Court held that recognition was sufficiently retroactive to validate a similar suit.

<sup>45</sup> *Agency of Canadian Car and Foundry Company, Limited et al vs. American Can Company*, 253 Federal, 1918, 152 at 157. District Judge Mayer also said that "the change in the form of Russian government and the fact that in the original papers that government was described as the "Imperial Russian Government," while the settlement papers are executed on behalf of the "Russian Government" are matters of no significance."

only to cases entertained by foreign states to enforce demands of a strictly civil nature.<sup>46</sup>

Turning to the second phase of this chapter we find that it is firmly settled, both in English and American jurisprudence, that a sovereign state is not, without its consent, subject to suit either in its own courts or in those of a foreign state.<sup>47</sup> The basis of immunity from suits in its own courts was stated by Mr. Justice Holmes in *Kawananakoa vs. Polyblank*.<sup>48</sup> The learned justice said that "a sovereign is exempt from suit not because of any formal conception or obsolete theory, but on the logical and practical ground that there can be no legal right as against the authority that makes the law on which the right depends."<sup>49</sup> In recent years the doctrine of immunity of a sovereign from suit in its own courts has been subjected to much criticism.<sup>50</sup>

---

See also *United States vs. McRea*, 1869, L. R. 8 Eq. 69; Moore, *Digest*, Vol. 1, p. 249 and 251; *Comanche County vs. Lewis*, 133 U. S., 1889, 198 at 205 where Mr. Justice Brewer said a change in form does not destroy responsibility.

<sup>46</sup> *Wisconsin vs. Pelican Insurance Company*, 127 U. S., 1887, 265 at 290; *Russian Government vs. Lehigh Valley Railway*, 293 Federal 1923, 135.

<sup>47</sup> This point is so thoroughly entrenched in the law that citations are unnecessary. On the first point one of the most interesting cases in *The Queen vs. McCleod*, 8 Canada Supreme Court Reports, 1882, 1, which involved the legal status of the Intercolonial Railway of Canada. In the initial suit the evidence showed that the railway in question was in such a poor state of repair that for a mile on each side of the curve at which the accident in question occurred, many of the ties could be kicked to pieces and that spikes could be picked from the rotten ties. The Supreme Court reversed a \$36,000 judgment on the sole ground that a sovereign could not be sued in the courts of his own country. In a fifty page opinion the court discusses the authorities at length. See also *Kansas vs. Colorado*, 206 U. S., 1906, 46; *Oregon vs. Hitchcock*, 202 U. S., 1906, 60; *United States vs. Lee*, 106 U. S., 1882, 196; *The Davis*, 10 Wallace, 1869, 15; *The Siren vs. United States*, 7 Wallace, 1868, 152; *Beers vs. Arkansas*, 20 Howard, 1857, 527; *United States vs. Clarke*, 8 Peters, 1834, 436; *Brown vs. United States*, 6 Ct. of Cl., 1870, 171; *Brunswick vs. Hanover*, 6 Beav. 1, 49 English Reprints, 724; *The Athol*, 1 Wm. Rob. 374. The best and most exhaustive historical discussion will be found in *Briggs vs. The Lightboats*, 93 Mass., 1863, 157 beginning at 166. On the second point, immunity from suit in a foreign state, see *The Exchange* 7 Cranch, 1812, 116; *Roumania vs. Guaranty Trust Co.*, 250 Federal, 1918, 341, same case 246 U. S., 1918, 663; *De Simone vs. Transportes Maritimos Do Estado*, 199 N. Y. Supp., 1922, 864; *Compania Mercantil Argentinian vs. United States Shipping Board*, 1924, 4 T. L. R. 601.

<sup>48</sup> 205 United States, 1906, 349.

<sup>49</sup> *Ibid.*, 349 at 353.

<sup>50</sup> Laski, *Responsibility of the State in England*, 32 Harvard Law Rev.,

The basis of the immunity of a foreign sovereign from suit is different. Immunity from suit in its own courts flows, as was stated by Mr. Justice Holmes, from the historical belief that the sovereign is above the law. The immunity of a foreign sovereign flows from considerations of practical expediency in friendly international intercourse.<sup>51</sup> The basis of the immunity was early given by Mr. Chief Justice Marshall in *The Exchange*.<sup>52</sup> Discussing the non-jurisdiction of the United States courts over a French war vessel, he declared that the vessel was exempt from process.<sup>53</sup> Resort was had to analogy rather than to precedent. The basis of Mr. Chief Justice Marshall's declaration was that to permit process to issue would "vex the peace of nations."

Recently the question has been raised as to whether the immunity from suit extends to unrecognized governments within recognized states. The issue appears to have been raised for the first time in *Wulfsohn vs. Russian Socialist Federated Soviet Republic*.<sup>54</sup> Wulfsohn and Company were

1918, 20; Duguit, *Law in the Modern State*, 1919, *Passim*; Borchard, *Government Responsibility in Tort—A Proposed Statutory Reform*, A. B. A. J., August 1925, p. 495.

<sup>51</sup> Weston, *Actions against the Property of Sovereigns*, 32 *Harvard Law Rev.*, 1919, 266.

<sup>52</sup> 7 Cranch, 1812, 116.

<sup>53</sup> "This full and absolute territorial jurisdiction being alike the attribute of every sovereign, and being incapable of conferring extraterritorial power, would not seem to contemplate foreign sovereigns, nor their sovereign rights, as its objects. One sovereign being in no respect amenable to another; and being bound by obligations of the highest character not to degrade the dignity of his nation, by placing himself or its sovereign rights within the jurisdiction of another, can be supposed to enter a foreign territory only under an express license, or in the confidence that the immunities belonging to his independent sovereign station, though not expressly stipulated, are reserved by implication, and will be extended to him.

"This perfect equality and absolute independence of sovereigns, and their common interest impelling them to mutual intercourse, and an interchange of good offices with each other, have given rise to a class of cases in which every sovereign is understood to waive the exercise of a part of that exclusive territorial jurisdiction, which has been stated to be the attribute of every nation.

"One of these is admitted to be the exemption of the person of the sovereign from arrest or detention within a foreign territory." *The Exchange*, 7 Cranch, 1812, 116 at 137.

<sup>54</sup> 234 N. Y., 1923, 372. Same case in 202 App. Div., 1922, 421. Re-argument denied, 235 N. Y., 1923, 579. See also 266 U. S., 1924, 580.

importers of furs. On June 25, 1920, a large quantity of their furs, valued at \$127,935.75, was seized at Yakutsk. Wulfsohn brought an action in the New York courts for conversion and secured an attachment on certain properties of the defendant which were within the jurisdiction of the court at that date.

On December 16, 1921, an appellate division of the New York Supreme Court had held that the Soviet Republic could not sue in the New York Courts.<sup>55</sup> On analogy the defendants reasoned that it could not be sued. Thereupon the defendants moved to set aside service of summons and dismiss the complaint. The defendant argued that it could not be sued because it was a foreign government and immune from process. The Supreme Court held that the immunity of a foreign government from suit is not based upon any absolute right by virtue of its sovereignty, but upon international comity. In the absence of any international comity existing between the United States and the Soviet Republic, the court held that it had no valid claim to the immunity. The inability to sue did not create any immunity from suit. The court allowed the recovery against the Soviet Republic as a public corporation.

This determination was affirmed by the appellate division of the second department of the Supreme Court.<sup>56</sup> The appellate division concluded that immunity from suit is based on international comity rather than upon absolute right and that the Soviet Republic, being unrecognized and unacknowledged was "not entitled to the immunities accorded to recognized governments." The appellate division relied heavily upon *Luther vs. Sagor*,<sup>57</sup> where, in the initial case, Judge Roche had said that the Soviet government was not "able

---

<sup>55</sup> *Russian Socialist Federated Soviet Republic vs. Cibrario*, 198 App. Div., 1921, 869; affirmed in 235 N. Y., 1923, 255.

<sup>56</sup> 202 App. Div., 1922, 421. Both the ability to sue and the immunity from suit are based on international comity, said the court.

<sup>57</sup> 1921, L. R. 1 K. B. 456; 1921, L. R. 3 K. B. 532.



by decree to deprive the plaintiff of its property." Lord Justice Scrutton, in the same case on appeal, after recognition, in explaining the immunities and privileges accorded on recognition, had said that should there be any government which appropriates other peoples property without compensation, the remedy would appear to be to refuse to recognize it as a sovereign state. "Then the courts could investigate the title without infringing the comity of nations."<sup>58</sup> The appellate division held that the Soviet Republic was "a foreign corporation aggregate" and liable to suit.

Thereafter the question was certified to the Court of Appeals whether an unrecognized government could be sued. The Court of Appeals answered the question in the negative, reversed the order of attachment and granted the motion to vacate the judgment and dismiss the complaint.<sup>59</sup>

The opinion, written by Judge Andrews, was based upon the ground that a *de facto* government is immune from suit regardless of recognition because the immunity does not rest upon comity but upon fundamental considerations of international relations. The court said: "They may not bring a foreign sovereign before our bar, not because of comity, but because he has not submitted himself to our laws. Without his consent he is not subject to them. Concededly that is so as to a foreign government that has received recognition."<sup>60</sup>

"But, whether recognized or not, the evil of such an at-

---

<sup>58</sup> Equally strong language was used by Mr. Chief Justice Marshall in *United States vs. Percheman*, 7 Peters 1833, 51. "It may not be unworthy to remark," said he, "that it is very unusual, even in cases of conquest, for the conqueror to do more than to displace the sovereign and assume dominion over the country. The modern usage of nations, which has become law, would be violated; that sense of justice and of right which is acknowledged and felt by the whole civilized world would be outraged, if private property should be generally confiscated, and private rights annulled," p. 86.

<sup>59</sup> 234 N. Y., 1923, 372.

<sup>60</sup> A number of cases are cited, among which are, *Porto Rico vs. Rosaly y Castillo*, 227, U. S., 1913, 270; *Hassard vs. United States of Mexico*, 29, Misc. Rep., 1903, 511, 61, N. Y. Supp. 939, affirmed in 173 N. Y. 645, 66 N. E. 1110; *Mason vs. Intercolonial Railway of Costa Rica*, 44 L. T. 199.



tempt would be the same. 'To cite a foreign potentate into a municipal court for any complaint against him in a public capacity is contrary to the law of nations and an insult which he is entitled to resent.'<sup>61</sup> In either case to do so would 'vex the peace of nations.' In either case the hands of the State Department would be tied. Unwillingly it would find itself involved in disputes it might think unwise. Such is not the proper method of redress if a citizen of the United States is wronged. The question is a political one, not confided to the courts but to another department of government. Whenever an act done by a sovereign in his sovereign character is questioned it becomes a matter of negotiation, or of reprisals or of war.'<sup>62</sup>

Immediately a motion for a reargument was made. This was denied,<sup>63</sup> but a *writ of error* was granted to the Supreme Court of the United States. On motion this writ was dismissed by the Supreme Court on the ground that no question of jurisdiction was involved.<sup>64</sup>

The instant case is a notable departure from former decisions. It is at variance with the law laid down by the English Court of Appeal in *Luther vs. Sagor*.<sup>65</sup> The case implies that the sovereign immunity attaches to a recognized state, and as such may be claimed by any government which professes to represent the national sovereignty.

It appears that the Court of Appeals, in the *Cibrario case*, by holding that an unrecognized government may not sue, thereby implied that such unrecognized governments were liable to suit. This implication was confirmed by the initial decisions in the *Wulfsohn case*. Yet, this view was put at

<sup>61</sup> *De Haber vs. Queen of Portugal*, 17 Q. B. 169, 1851, 117 English Reprints 1246.

<sup>62</sup> 234 N. Y., 1923, 372 at 376.

<sup>63</sup> 235 N. Y., 1923, 579.

<sup>64</sup> 266 U. S., 1924, 580.

<sup>65</sup> 1921, L. R. 1 K. B. 456; 1921, L. R. 3 K. B. 1921, 532. The English Court of Appeal did not hold that the Soviet Republic was liable to suit. It held that in the absence of recognition no validity would be given to its confiscation decrees once the property is brought within the jurisdiction of the English courts. They were regarded as a nullity.

rest by the reversal of the *Wulfsohn* case at the hands of the Court of Appeals. This court held that the Soviet Republic was immune from process.

Wulfsohn weakened his case by an admission that the Soviet Republic was the existing *de facto* government of Russia, and this was pointed out by the Court of Appeals. Yet, regardless of the admission, the decision seems to be thoroughly sound. The *de facto* character of the Soviet Republic was a matter of common knowledge. It was being sued for an exercise of authority within its own jurisdiction. If the Court of Appeals had insisted upon making recognition the criterion of immunity, the court would have blundered into the very sort of political question which it is the rule in regard to recognition to avoid. The distinction is a new one which the writer regards as sound.

Subsequent decisions show that the courts regard the Wulfsohn case as good law. In *Nankivel vs. Omsk All-Russian Government*,<sup>66</sup> the Court of Appeals reaffirmed this new principle of immunity from suit of an unrecognized government within a recognized state

In the *Nankivel case* a default judgment for \$96,392.38 had been obtained. The plaintiff attempted to enforce this default judgment against certain banks which they claimed held property of the defendant government. The banks, against which the proceedings had been brought, contended that the default judgment which formed the basis of the proceedings was void because the defendant was either a foreign *de facto* government immune from suit, or else totally defunct and out of existence at the time of the commencement of the action. Both contentions were denied by the Supreme Court and its appellate division.<sup>67</sup> Thereafter the question whether the defendant had, prior to the commencement of the action, so totally ceased to exist as to render the

---

<sup>66</sup> 237 N. Y., 1923, 150.

<sup>67</sup> 203 App. Div., 1921, 740.

default judgment void, was certified to the Court of Appeals. This court unanimously answered the question in the affirmative, Judge Pound writing the decision.

The Court of Appeals held that the proof was conclusive that, prior to the commencement of the action, the defendant had ceased to exist because it ceased to govern. The Soviet government had defeated its armies and driven its commander into exile. The default judgment therefore was void and subject to attack by third parties.<sup>68</sup> So long as the Omsk Government maintained an independent existence it was immune from suit for its governmental acts. "Lack of recognition by the United States Government," said the court, "does not permit an individual suitor to bring a *de facto* government before the bar."<sup>69</sup> To sue a sovereign state is to insult it in a manner which it may treat with silent contempt. It is not bound to come into our courts and plead its immunity. It is liable to suit only when its consent is duly given.<sup>70</sup> When defendant was extinguished by conquest, it became, so far as its continued corporate existence is concerned, as if it had never existed."<sup>71</sup>

<sup>68</sup> "It is a matter of common knowledge and the moving papers establish the fact that if the Omsk All-Russian Government was at any time even a *de facto* government in the international sense," it was created as such with Admiral Kolchak at its head at Omsk in November 1918, and recognized by General Simionoff and his forces at Vladivostok, and thereafter driven out of all regional control by the Bolshevik government, not later than March, 1920. "During its ephemeral and disastrous career, it asserted its authority over a portion of the inhabitants of the former Russian Empire who had, after the debacle, separated themselves from the central government and established an independent sovereign government over a limited territory in Siberian Russia. It was not a subordinate state nor a civil division of the Soviet Republic. It was either what plaintiffs choose to call it, a *de facto* government, and therefore sovereign in character, or it was a mere aggregation of robbers and murderers, outside the protection of the laws of war. When its leaders failed in their endeavors to establish themselves permanently; when the armed forces of the Soviet Government defeated its armies, overran its territory, executed Kolchak and drove Semionoff into exile, its sovereignty ceased and the Omsk All-Russian Government utterly perished. Whether alive or dead, no valid judgment could be obtained against it." 237 N. Y. 150 at 156.

<sup>69</sup> *Wulfsohn vs. Russian Socialist Federated Soviet Republic*, 234 N. Y. 372.

<sup>70</sup> *Porto Rico vs. Rosaly*, 227 U. S., 1913, 270.

<sup>71</sup> *Nankival vs. Omsk All-Russian Government*, 237 N. Y., 1923, 150 at 156 and 157.

The respondents then contended that even though the objections did exist, they could not be raised by third parties. The court thought the necessities of the case compelled an opposite conclusion. The defendant was not called upon to plead its immunity. The dead government could not plead its own demise in abatement of the action. It could not by default admit its own existence. "The fact of such existence could not be litigated in the action. Acquiescence will not be inferred from the silence of the dead. The judgment was void," said the court. The appellants were affected by it and had a right to ask that its nullity be officially declared.<sup>72</sup> The Omsk All-Russian Government was immune from suit, said the court.

We conclude that the immunity from suit of a recognized state with a recognized government has become well settled. There appears to be only one exception. This refers to the immunity of state property used for commercial purposes. The judges have not agreed on this point.

With the deposition of kings and the passing of the divine right theory, sovereign immunity has gradually weakened. With the increased socialization of the state and the expansion of governmental activities, the distinction between public and commercial functions has become more obscure. Still greater obscurity is to be expected in the future. If the immunity is left to the courts to be decided upon principle confusion may be the result.

Although Mr. Justice Holmes has stated that there can be no remedy as against the authority which makes the law, yet the writer defends the position that such should not be the rule. Those charged with the dispensation of justice, should be held to account in order that justice may be done. Slowly, but surely, this view is working its way into the law. Legislatures, both state and national, have shown a desirable tendency to cancel the immunities of the government in cer-

---

<sup>72</sup> 237 N. Y., 1923, 150 at 158.



tain of its activities. The courts in the United States have demonstrated less reverence for the immunity than in former times.

As early as 1882, the cases were reviewed, a dissent was expressed and the modern tendency was explained by Mr. Justice Gray of the Supreme Court.<sup>73</sup> More recently the courts have held that Congress did not intend that the Emergency Fleet Corporation of the United States Shipping Board should be immune.<sup>74</sup> The Supreme Court unanimously agreed upon this point, although the court was divided as to whether such suits should be instituted in the Court of Claims or in the Federal District Courts. It appears that the immunity of similarly engaged domestic vessels has been canceled by Italy.<sup>75</sup>

In the United States the problem of the immunity of foreign government owned and government operated merchant vessels was presented to the Supreme Court for the first time in 1926. The sole question before the court was whether a ship owned by Italy and operated by it in the

<sup>73</sup> *United States vs. Lee*, 106 U. S., 1882, 196, from 223 to 251.

<sup>74</sup> *Sloan Shipyards vs. United States Emergency Fleet Corporation*, and two other cases considered together, 258 U. S., 1921, 249, where the sole issue was whether the Emergency Fleet Corporation was liable to suit. It involved an interpretation of the will of Congress. Mr. Justice Holmes, who delivered the opinion of the court, held that it was not immune. Mr. Chief Justice Taft delivered an instructive dissenting opinion in which Mr. Justice Van Devanter and Mr. Justice Clarke concurred, in which they did not disagree as to liability but only as to the court in which such suits should be instituted. Other cases involving liability of the Emergency Fleet Corporation are *Stewart vs. U. S. Shipping Board Emergency Fleet Corporation*, 7 Federal 2d, 1925, 676; *Mallory S. S. Co. vs. Garfield*, 10 Federal 2d, 1926, 664; *United States Shipping Board Emergency Fleet Corporation vs. Texas Star Flour Mills*, 12 Federal 2d, 1926, 9; *Ibid. vs. Rosenberg Brothers & Company*, 12 Federal 2d, 1926, 721; *Marshall Hall Grain Company vs. United States Shipping Board Emergency Fleet Corporation*, 14 Federal 2d, 1926, 141; *Fidelity Trust Company of New York vs. United States Shipping Board Emergency Fleet Corporation*, 15 Federal 2d, 1926, 600; *Cohn vs. United States Shipping Board*, 20 Federal 2d, 1927, 398.

<sup>75</sup> 277 Federal, 1921, 473. It was this non-immunity from suit in Italy which served as the basis of Judge Mack's decision. *United States vs. Sisal Sales Corporation*, 274 U. S., 1927, 268, reversing the decision of the trial court which had regarded *American Banana Company vs. United Fruit Company*, 213 U. S., 1909, 359 as controlling. Mr. Justice McReynolds delivered the opinion of the court. No cases are cited in accord.



carriage of merchandise for hire, was immune from arrest under process based on a libel *in rem* by a private suitor in a Federal District Court exercising admiralty jurisdiction.<sup>76</sup> The court quoted at length from *The Exchange*<sup>77</sup> and *The Parlement Belge*<sup>78</sup> and concluded that the Italian vessel was was immune from process "as an instrument of sovereignty."<sup>79</sup>

In a recent case, 1927, the Federal District Court for the Southern District of New York, held that a corporation which was sponsored and favored by a foreign government was liable for breach of contract and that the property of such a corporation was not exempt from execution as the property of a foreign government.<sup>80</sup>

On May 17, 1919, the Swiss Department of Commerce, acting under a delegation of authority from the Federal Council, organized the Société Cooperative Suisse des Charbons to purchase and import coal into Switzerland. Certain Swiss coal importers were eligible to membership and 6 per

<sup>76</sup> *Berizzi Bros. Co. vs. S. S. Pesaro*, 271 U. S., 1926, 562. Mr. Van Devanter said that "this precise question has never been considered by this court before," p. 570.

<sup>77</sup> 7 Cranch, 116.

<sup>78</sup> 1880, L. R. 5 P. D. 197.

<sup>79</sup> As early as 1918 the district courts had affirmed the immunity of such vessels. See *The Maipo*, 252 Federal, 1918, 627, for denial of a libel for cargo damages against a Chilean vessel, by District Judge Mayer "on authority and in consideration of existing conditions." The best reasoning is to be found in *The Maipo*, 259 Federal, 1919, 367, where Circuit Judge Hough sitting in admiralty said: . . . "I do not think the enormous extension of sovereign privilege demanded by vessels in all kinds of business of late months and years indicates any advance or change in the law at all. The law remains the same. What has changed is the view which the governments of the world assume toward public duties or public enterprises." The reason back of the exemption of war vessels is that it is a part of the exercise or manifestation of sovereign power: not because it is a public vessel as such.

"Now, it may be the opinion of counsel, as it assuredly is my opinion, that when a sovereign republic, empire or whatnot, goes into business and engages in the carrying trade, it ought to be subject to the liabilities of carriers just as much as any private person; but I think it must be plain that if I, in my official capacity, were to assert that view and enforce it, I would be assuming (in this case), as one of the humbler officers of the government of the United States, to define for the Republic of Chile what that republic should consider to be governmental function."

<sup>80</sup> *Coale et al. vs. Société etc.*, 21 Fed. (2d), 1927, 180.

cent was to be paid upon the capital invested. Profits above 6 per cent went to the government. The government appointed seven of the seventeen directors. The charter and amendments and rules were subject to the approval of the government. These facts were set up by the corporation in answer to a suit for breach of contract. The plaintiff demurred and the court sustained the demurrer. The court said that "if the Swiss government chose to do its business by means of the Société, the latter as a corporate entity, was liable for its corporate obligations. . . . If the Société had contracted as the agent of the Swiss government, the case might have been different; but in this instance the Swiss minister signed the contract for the corporation."

Two cases were cited by the court in support of the doctrine.<sup>81</sup> Examination reveals that neither of the cases are strictly applicable inasmuch as they did not involve the suit of foreign government favored corporations. The cases involved the suit of domestic government owned corporations.

In the instant case the court proceeded on the theory that the corporation is a separate entity, distinct from the government or the stockholders. The court followed the doctrine stated in innumerable cases that a corporation is distinct from its stockholders.<sup>82</sup>

In the light of this decision the following paragraph from Circuit Judge Hough's opinion in *The Maipo*,<sup>83</sup> is provocative of much thought: "If the Republic of Chile considers it a governmental function to go into the carrying trade, as would appears to be the case here, that is the business of the Republic of Chile: and if we do not approve of it, if we do not like it, if we do not wish any longer to accord that respect to the property so engaged, which has hitherto been accorded

<sup>81</sup> *Commercial Pacific Cable Co., vs. Philippine National Bank*, 263 Fed., 1920, 218, affirmed 269 Fed., 1921, 1022; and *U. S. vs. Strang*, 254 U. S., 1921, 491.

<sup>82</sup> *Donnell vs. Herring-Hall-Marvin Safe Co.*, 208 U. S. 267; *Continental Tyre and Rubber Co., Ltd., vs. Daimler Co., Ltd.*, 1 K. B., 1915, 893.

<sup>83</sup> 259 Fed., 1919, 367 at 368.

to government property, then we must say so through diplomatic channels, and not through the judiciary. Otherwise, the judiciary are really contributing to what might become, under conceivable circumstances, a *casus belli*.”<sup>84</sup>

In summary it may be said that a recognized government in a recognized state may sue in the courts of a recognizing state. An unrecognized government in a recognized state may not sue. This is the law and the writer regards it as eminently sound. However, a recognized government whose non-existence is a matter of world notoriety may continue suits previously instituted provided they are continued in the name of the state, and not in the name of the government. A number of the cases imply that an unrecognized state may be sued; that it may be made a party defendant as a *de facto* public corporation, while at the same time it is incapable of being a party plaintiff. Recently, however, some of the courts have disallowed suits against unrecognized *de facto* governments on the theory that the immunity attaches to the state and may be claimed by the *de facto* as well as by the *de jure* agents of such state.

There has been much discussion by the courts as to the basis of the immunity from suit. The initial basis was comity, or courtesy between nations, rather than absolute right.<sup>85</sup> The immunity was allowed in order to preserve the peace and harmony of nations: to regulate state intercourse

<sup>84</sup> A similar case is *The Carlo Poma*, 259 Federal, 1919, 369. See *The Pesaro*, 13 Fed. 2d, 1926, 468. The leading case contra is *The Pesaro*, 277 Federal 473, which was reversed in 271 U. S., 1926, 562. The *Gul Djmal* is sometimes cited as contra. 264 U. S. 90. However the *Gul Djmal* was not a government operated vessel, so that the cases can be squared by the essential difference in their facts. On the probable decision of the Supreme Court see, *The United States vs. Sisal Sales Corporation*, 274 U. S., 1927, 268, seemingly holding a Mexican public corporation liable for violation of the anti-trust laws. No cases are cited in accord. The Department of Justice has given it as its opinion that immunity from process would not attach.

<sup>85</sup> “The right of immunity of a foreign government from suit is not based upon absolute right by virtue of its absolute sovereignty, but upon international comity.” *Wulfsohn vs. Russian Socialist Federated Soviet Republic*, 195 N. Y. Supp., 1922, 472 at 474. This basis was first given by Mr. Chief Justice Marshall in *The Exchange vs. McFaddon*, 7 Cranch, 1812, 116.

in a manner commensurate with its dignity and rights.<sup>86</sup> It was originally considered to be the legal consequence of the absolute independence of every sovereign authority.<sup>87</sup> More recently, however, the courts have placed the immunity of foreign sovereigns upon the same basis as the domestic sovereign.<sup>88</sup>

Questions have been raised as to the method by which a foreign sovereignty should raise the question of its sovereign immunity. Suffices to say that the government may appear and set up its jurisdictional claims, or its accredited representatives may appear and take the same steps. If there is any objection to such an appearance the government may present its asserted public status through the usual diplomatic channels. If the asserted claim is recognized by the executive department of our government, it may be set forth in appropriate suggestion to the court by the Attorney-General of the United States, or by some law officer acting under his direction.<sup>89</sup>

<sup>86</sup> *The Santissima Trinidad*, 7 Wheaton, 1822, 282 at 352 and 355.

<sup>87</sup> *The Parlement Belge*, L. R., 1880, 5 P. D. 197. "We are of the opinion," said Lord Justice Brett of the Court of Appeal, "that the proposition deduced from the earlier cases (referring especially to *The Exchange*, supra) . . . is the correct exposition of the law of nations, viz., that as a consequence of the absolute independence of every sovereign authority and of the international comity which induces every sovereign state to respect the independence of every other sovereign state, each and every one declines to exercise by means of any of its courts, any of its territorial jurisdiction over the person of any sovereign or ambassador of any other state, or over the public property of any state which is destined to its public use, or over the property of any ambassador, though such sovereign, ambassador or property be within its territory, and therefore, but for the common agreement, subject to its jurisdiction," p. 217.

<sup>88</sup> Mr. Justice Holmes in *Kawananakoa vs. Polyblank*, 205 United States 349 at 353 declares that "some doubts have been expressed as to the source of the immunity . . . but the answer has been public property since before the days of Hobbes, Leviathan, Ch. 26, 2. . . . 'Car on peut bien recevoir loy d' autrui, mais il est impossible par nature de se donner loy.' Bodin, *Republique*, 1, c. 8. Ed. 1629, p. 132."

<sup>89</sup> The method is discussed by the court in *De Simone vs. Transportes Maritimos Do Estado*, 199 App. Div. N. Y. 602, 191 N. Y. Supp. 864. See also, *Attestation by Foreign Government through Amici Curiae*, Univ. of Penna. Law Review, 1921, v. 69, pp. 385-386.



## CHAPTER VII

### EXTRATERRITORIAL OPERATION OF ACTS OF RECOGNIZED AND UNRECOGNIZED GOVERNMENTS

After coming into power in November 1917, the Russian Socialist Federated Soviet Republic proceeded to "relieve the working man from the exploitation of capital," and provide for "the proper organization of national economic life." It did this through a series of nationalization decrees.<sup>1</sup> The decrees covered such businesses as shipping, manufacturing, woodworking, banking<sup>2</sup> and insurance.<sup>3</sup> They declared these businesses to be monopolies of the state, confiscated their properties and proceeded to dissolve the companies engaged therein. The decrees were signed by Lenin as Chairman of the Council of the People's Commissaries.

They had scarcely been signed before the courts of non-recognizant states were compelled to consider their extra-territorial effects. Modern financial and commercial relations between states have become so intimately interwoven that the decrees of the Soviet Republic entailed repercussions throughout the globe. It became incumbent upon the English and American courts to determine the legality of such decrees, and their task has been neither pleasant nor easy.<sup>4</sup>

<sup>1</sup> Translations of some of the decrees may be found in the judgment of Viscount Cave in the case of *Russian Commercial and Industrial Bank vs. Comptoir d'Escompte de Mulhouse*, 93 L. J. B. N. S., 1098 at 1099 to 1107, 40 T. L. R. 837; 1925, A. C. 112 before House of Lords.

<sup>2</sup> *Gurdus vs. Philadelphia National Bank*, 273 Penna., 1922, 110, 116 Atl. 672; *Sokoloff vs. National City Bank*, 239 N. Y. 158, 145 N. E. 917.

<sup>3</sup> *Hennenlotter vs. Norwich Union Fire Insurance Company*, 124, Misc., (N. Y.), 1924, 626, 207 N. Y. Supp. 588. Other cases are covered in later notes. See P. Wohl, *Nationalisation of Joint Stock Banking Corporations in Soviet Russia and its Bearing on Their Legal Status Abroad*, 75 U. of Pa. L. Rev., 1927, 385, 527, 622.

<sup>4</sup> Anarchical legislation produces results "difficult to fit in with the leg-



If recognition has been accorded by the political departments of the government, no difficulty is involved.<sup>5</sup> In such cases the laws, acts and decrees of the government are accepted as valid and binding upon the courts as a rule for their decisions, unless such laws, acts or decrees are contrary to law or the public policy of the recognizant state.<sup>6</sup> Legal effect must be given to such acts regardless of what the courts may think of the wisdom or justice of the acts in question. Furthermore, it is immaterial whether the foreign power has been recognized as a *de jure* or only as a *de facto* government. These issues were considered at length in a preceding chapter and will not be reconsidered here.

The cases of gravest concern to the courts have been those arising out of *de facto* situations to which recognition at the time remained unaccorded. The cases in point have centered chiefly around the *de facto* situation in Russia, and in most instances the issue has been raised in the form of a defense. In each instance the important issue before the court has been the exact extraterritorial effect to be given to the acts, laws and decrees of the unrecognized government.

In two classes of cases the law is well settled. In the first place, the courts have uniformly held that individuals who

---

isolation of orderly States. The judges can only endeavor to apply settled principles; legislation, or abstention by the Sovereign from recognition of anarchical States, must do the rest." Lord Justice Scrutton, *Banque Internationale de Commerce vs. Goukassow*, 1923, L. R. 2 K. B. 693.

<sup>5</sup> "It is not an agreeable task for a British court of justice to consider the effect of a series of decrees and orders providing for the compulsory acquisition by a foreign state of the assets of private persons 'on the basis of complete confiscation.' But the Soviet government has been recognized by Great Britain as the lawful government of Russia; and this being so its decrees must . . . be treated by the courts of this country as binding so far as the jurisdiction of the Russian government extends. . . ." Viscount Cave, *Russian Commercial & Industrial Bank vs. Comptoir d'Escompte de Mulhouse*, *supra*.

<sup>6</sup> *Oetjen vs. Central Leather Co.*, 246 U. S., 1918, 397. See also Max Habicht, *The Application of Soviet Laws and the Exception of Public Order*, 21 A. J., 1927, 238; O. K. Fraenkel, *Juristic Status of Foreign States*, 25 Colum. Law Rev., 1925, 668; E. D. Dickinson, *Unrecognized Government or State in English and American Law*, 22 Mich. Law Rev., 1923, 29 and 118; L. Connick, *Effect of Soviet decrees in American Courts*, 34 Yale Law J., 1925, 499.

have submitted to the *de facto* situation are protected against subsequent prosecution in the courts of the recognizant state. In the second place the courts will not give extraterritorial effect to confiscation by unrecognized factions where the confiscated property is carried within the jurisdiction of the adjudicating court.

Cases of the first type were originally presented to the Supreme Court of the United States in 1819. The first case was *United States vs. Rice*.<sup>7</sup> The Supreme Court held that goods which had been brought into the United States through a port which was under the control of the British during the War of 1812 could not be held for further import duties.<sup>8</sup> The sovereignty of the United States was suspended during its occupation by the British forces, and for all practical purposes the port was during such occupation a foreign port. The court recognized the validity of the demands of the faction in *de facto* control and held that importers were protected from the payment of further duties.<sup>9</sup>

A more recent case also involved the payment of import duties to a military faction.<sup>10</sup> An action was brought against

<sup>7</sup> 4 Wheaton, 1819, 246.

<sup>8</sup> A similar issue was raised in *Fleming vs. Page*, 9 Howard, 1850, 603 where an action was brought to recover customs duties which had been paid upon goods imported into Philadelphia from Tampico, Mexico. The issue before the court was whether Tampico, at the time, was under the dominion of the United States to such an extent that no duties were payable. The Supreme Court denied the contention; it held that Tampico was a foreign port and that the goods were liable to duty. However, the case turned upon the construction of an act of Congress. Yet the court did say that "other nations were bound to regard the country, while our possession continued, as the territory of the United States, and to respect it as such." Mr. Chief Justice Taney, at p. 615.

<sup>9</sup> Protection for individual acts was also raised in *Underhill vs. Hernandez*. A suit for damages arose out of alleged unlawful detention in time of civil war. Judgment was given for the defendant by the district, circuit and supreme courts. The courts held that judicially no relief could be had by reason of the acts of a government: that where acts occur in the course of a political revolt as the result of actual war, no liability can be based thereon, even when the revolt fails. The court said: "Redress of grievances by reason of such acts must be obtained through the means open to be availed of by sovereign powers as between themselves." 168 U. S., 1897, 250 at 252. The *American Banana Company vs. United Fruit Company* is sometimes cited in point, but a doubt may be expressed as to whether this case is in accord with the others. 213 U. S., 1909, 347.

<sup>10</sup> *MacLeod vs. United States*, 229 U. S., 1913, 416.

the United States, to recover for duties paid during the military occupation of the Philippine Islands, for imports to the Island of Cebu which was then in the control of certain Philippine insurgents. The duties had been paid to the rebel authorities. The Supreme Court remanded the case to the Court of Claims with instructions to enter judgment for the claimants, holding that the claimants having acted in compliance with the orders of the *de facto* government were protected from further exactions. The court felt that such duties, collected on cargoes imported at ports which had not been reduced to possession by the United States but were in possession of the *de facto* government of insurgents, were an illegal and unwarranted exaction.<sup>11</sup> The government was one of paramount force comparable to that discussed in *Thorington vs. Smith*.<sup>12</sup> The claimants were entitled to protection for their past acts.

A case somewhat analogous to *MacLeod vs. United States* had arisen in 1899.<sup>13</sup> An insurrectionary movement of Bluefields, headed by one General Heyes, had acquired undisputed control of the Mosquito Territory in Nicaragua. His control continued from February 3, to February 25, 1899. Then subsequent to the reestablishment of Nicaraguan authority over the territory, the government demanded of American merchants the payment to it of certain duties which, during the interregnum, they had been compelled to pay to the insurgent authorities in *de facto* control. The United States government remonstrated. The duties were, by agreement, deposited in the British Consulate pending a settlement of the controversy.<sup>14</sup> The United States in-

---

<sup>11</sup> "The statement of the facts shows that the insurgent government was in actual possession of the Custom house at Cebu, with power to enforce the collection of duties there, as it did." 229 U. S., 1913, 416 at 428.

<sup>12</sup> 8 Wallace, 1869, 1 at pp. 8-10.

<sup>13</sup> *The Bluefields case*, 1 Moore, *Digest*, p. 49.

<sup>14</sup> The Department of State received the sworn statements of the American merchants that they were not accomplices of General Reyes, that the money actually exacted was the amount due on bonds which then matured for duties levied the preceding December, that payment was made to the

sisted that her nationals should be protected: that to demand a second payment would be "an act of international injustice."<sup>15</sup>

The money was returned to the American merchants with the assent of the Government of Nicaragua. An attempt was made to compel the American merchants to establish their defense in the Nicaraguan courts. The United States objected that the question had become a diplomatic one, and the attempt failed.

The State Department insisted that individuals subject to the jurisdiction of a *de facto* government, who had paid import duties in pursuance of its orders must be protected against penalties for obedience to such commands.<sup>16</sup> Likewise the courts hold that individuals must be protected for similar acts done in obedience to *de facto* governments.

Let us now turn to the second class of cases; those which involve title to property found within the non-recognizant state, where the property has formerly been seized by *de facto* authorities. There are only two cases on the point.

---

titular head who was continued in office by General Reyes, that payment was demanded under threat of suspension of importations, and that from February 3, to February 25, 1899, General Reyes was in full control of the civil and military agencies of the Mosquito Territory. On these facts the United States expressed the opinion that to exact the second payment would be "an act of international injustice."

<sup>15</sup> Moore, *Digest*, Vol. 1, p. 51.

<sup>16</sup> A similar case had arisen a quarter of a century before in which the United States was requested by Great Britain to use its good offices to prevent the exaction by the Mexican Government of certain duties of Mazatlan, which duties had been previously paid to insurgents. Mr. Fish, Secretary of State, in his instructions to Mr. Nelson, our Minister to Mexico, said that it was difficult to understand upon what ground of equity or public law such duties could be claimed. The United States felt that "the obligation of obedience to a government at a particular place in a country may be regarded as suspended, at least, when its authority is usurped, and is due to the usurpers if they choose to exercise it. To require a repayment of duties in such cases is tantamount to the exaction of a penalty on the misfortune, if it may be so called, of remaining and carrying on business in a part where the authority of the government had been annulled. . . ." He referred to *United States vs. Rice* and to the cases which arose out of the Civil War. With reference to the latter he said: "Since the close of the Civil War in this country, suits have been brought against importers for duties on merchandise paid to insurgent authorities. Those suits, however, have been discontinued." Moore, *Digest*, Vol. 1, p. 49.



One is an early American case. The other is a recent English decision.

The first case, *The Nueva Anna and Liebre*, was before the Supreme Court of the United States in 1821.<sup>17</sup> The Spanish owners of two vessels, which had been captured and condemned under the authority of the Mexican Republic, libelled them in the American courts. In the absence of any kind of recognition of the Mexican Republic on the part of the United States, the Supreme Court stated that it "could not consider as legal, any acts done under the flag and commission of such republic or state."<sup>18</sup> The Supreme Court regarded the capture, under such purported authority, as a nullity. No cases or authorities were cited in the decision.<sup>19</sup>

The other case in point came before the English courts in 1921.<sup>20</sup> The court held that in the absence of any recognition by the political departments, the seizure in Russia of plywood subsequently brought to England, was to be regarded as void. The court implied that validity to acts of seizure would be given effect only as a matter of comity. The case was reversed on appeal because of the retroactive effect of subsequent *de facto* recognition.<sup>21</sup> Nevertheless, the Court of Appeal approved the determination of the court below on the facts as they then stood. A dictum to the same effect was expressed by the first department of the supreme court of New York on an appeal in *Bourne vs. Bourne* in 1924.<sup>22</sup>

<sup>17</sup> 6 Wheaton 193.

<sup>18</sup> *Ibid.*, pp. 193-194.

<sup>19</sup> A dictum to the same effect by the same court may be found in *Williams vs. Bruffy*, 96 U. S., 1877, 176.

<sup>20</sup> *Luther vs. Sagor*, 1921, L. R. 3 K. B. 532.

<sup>21</sup> *Ibid.*

<sup>22</sup> 209 App. Div., (N. Y.), 419 at 427, referring to the Singer Sewing Machine Company. "The Company had been doing business in all parts of the world. Subsidiary companies had been organized throughout Europe. . . . Prior to December 31, 1918, the revolution in Russia had taken place and certain alleged decrees or edicts pronounced by means of which the confiscation of much property was intended to be brought about. This government has never recognized the revolutionary government of Russia and such decrees have no force or effect and are of no importance except as



In numerous recent cases the courts, more especially the New York Court of Appeals, have implied that effect would be given to other decrees, laws and acts of unrecognized *de facto* governments in so far as justice would thereby be accomplished. Some of the justices, especially Judge Cardozo, have felt that "justice and common sense" require the court to give some effect to the factual situation in Russia.<sup>23</sup>

The germ of the "justice and common sense view" is found in the cases of the nineteenth century.<sup>24</sup> It found expression in numerous cases which turned upon the validity of decrees of the Confederate States. The Supreme Court of the United States sustained numerous acts relating to the creation of domestic corporations,<sup>25</sup> the sale of property,<sup>26</sup> and payment of debts in the specie of the regime.<sup>27</sup> It generally upheld all laws which were necessary to the peace and good order of the realm, such as sanctioning and protecting marriage, determining laws of descent, regulating the transfer of property and providing legal redress for injuries.<sup>28</sup> The Civil War cases involve the rule in its positive form: in each instance the acts, decrees or laws are recognized as valid by the Supreme Court unless public policy and justice required otherwise.

The genesis of the inverted exception of justice and public policy in recent years is to be found in Judge Cardozo's dictum in *Sokoloff vs. National City Bank*.<sup>29</sup> In June, 1917,

---

interesting facts tending to fix dates." (*Russian Commercial and Industrial Bank vs. Comptoir d'Escompte de Mulhouse*, 1923 L. R. 2 K. B. 630.) The Singer Sewing Machine Company lost approximately \$75,000,000 under the nationalization decrees.

<sup>23</sup> *Sokoloff vs. National City Bank*, 239 N. Y., 1924, 158, 145 N. E. 910. The same doctrine was reaffirmed the following year, 1924, in *James vs. Second Russian Insurance Company*, 239 N. Y. 248, 146 N. E. 369.

<sup>24</sup> *United States vs. Rice*, 4 Wheaton, 1819, 246. The same idea runs through *MacLeod vs. United States*, 229 U. S. 1913, 416.

<sup>25</sup> *United States vs. Insurance Companies*, 22 Wallace, 1874, 99.

<sup>26</sup> *Thorington vs. Smith*, 8 Wallace, 1868.

<sup>27</sup> *Delmas vs. Merchants National Insurance Company*, 14 Wallace, 1871, 661.

<sup>28</sup> *Texas vs. White*, 7 Wallace, 1868, 700; *Williams vs. Bruffy*, 96 U. S., 1877, 176; *Baldy vs. Hunter*, 171 U. S., 1897, 388.

<sup>29</sup> 239 N. Y., 1924, 158.

one Sokoloff paid over \$30,225 to the National City Bank of New York, in New York, to be repaid in rubles at its branch bank at Petrograd. A contract to that effect was entered into by the parties. In November 1917, and February 1918, certain checks of the plaintiff were dishonored at the Petrograd branch although the plaintiff's books showed a balance of \$28,365. Thereupon Sokoloff brought an action in the New York courts against the National City Bank to rescind the contract.

The National City Bank defended that the Soviet government had nationalized all private banks, that Sokoloff's deposit at Petrograd had been seized and his title divested, and that therefore the bank's liability had been discharged. Sokoloff contended that the Soviet Republic was not recognized by the United States, and that in the absence of recognition, either *de jure* or *de facto*, the laws and decrees of the Soviets should be accorded no force. The court decided that the decrees, even though of an unrecognized government, might be given quasi-governmental validity by the court if justice and public policy demanded it. However, the court held that public policy did not require recognition of the decrees in the case before the court. Judge Cardozo wrote the opinion.

The court acknowledged that other courts of high repute had held that confiscation by a government to which recognition has been refused has no more effect in law than seizure by lawless bodies.<sup>30</sup> "It would be hazardous," said Judge Cardozo, "none the less, to say that a rule so comprehensive and so drastic is not subject to exception under pressure or some insistent claim of policy or justice.

"Juridically, a government that is unrecognized may be viewed as no government at all, if the power withholding

---

<sup>30</sup> *Russian Commercial and Industrial Bank vs. Comptoir d'Escompte de Mulhouse*, 1923, L. R. 2 K. B. 630 at 638; *Banque Internationale de Commerce vs. Goukassow*, 1923, L. R. 2 K. B. 682; *Luther vs. Sagor*, 1921, L. R. 1 K. B. 456; *Child & Beney vs. Simmons*, 1922, 127 L. T. N. S. 571.

recognition chooses thus to view it. In practice, however, since juridical conceptions are seldom, if ever, carried to the limit of their logic, the equivalence is not absolute, but is subject to self-imposed limitations of common sense and fairness, as we learned in litigations following our Civil War.”<sup>31</sup>

Violence to our own fundamental principles of justice in the instant case did not require that the courts give validity to the acts in question. The defendant was not a bailee: the *res* was not a physical object committed to the plaintiffs keeping, but a *chose in action*, a right to receive rubles in the future under an executory contract. The Soviet government could not terminate the charter of the National City Bank which had been formed under the laws of New York rather than of Russia, so that the defense fell to the ground. “Everything in Russia might have been destroyed by fire or flood, by war or revolution,” said the court, and still the “defendant would have remained bound by its engagements.” The court gave judgment for the plaintiff. The case is im-

---

<sup>31</sup> “In those litigations acts or decrees of the rebellious governments, which, of course, had not been recognized as governments *de facto*, were held to be nullities when they worked injustice to citizens of the Union or were in conflict with its public policy. . . . On the other hand acts or decrees that were just in operation and consistent with public policy were sustained not infrequently to the same extent as if the governments were lawful. . . . These analogies suggest the thought that, subject to like restrictions, effect may at times be due to the ordinances of foreign governments which, though formally unrecognized, have notoriously an existence as governments *de facto*. Consequences appropriate enough when recognition is withheld on the ground that rival factions are still contending for the mastery may be in need of readjustment before they can be fitted to the practice, now a growing one, of withholding recognition whenever it is thought that a government, functioning unhampered, is unworthy of a place in the Society of Nations. Limitations upon the general rule may be appropriate for the protection of one who has been the victim of spoliation, though they would be refused to the spoliator or to others claiming under him. We leave these questions open. At the utmost, they suggest the possibility that a body or group which has vindicated by the course of events its pretensions to sovereign power, but which has forfeited by its conduct the privileges or immunities of sovereignty, may gain for its acts and decrees a validity quasi-governmental if violence to fundamental principles of justice or to our own public policy might otherwise be done.

“We think the defendant, though we were to assume the existence of such exceptions to the need of recognition, has not brought itself within them.” *Sokoloff vs. National City Bank*, 239 N. Y. 158, 145 N. E. 917 at 918 and 919.

portant because it holds that no extraterritorial effect will be given to the decrees of an unrecognized government unless justice and public policy require it. They did not require it in the instant case.

Two months later the same court had occasion to examine the extraterritorial effects of similar decrees in the case of *James and Company vs. Second Russian Insurance Company*.<sup>32</sup> A Russian corporation doing business in New York, contracted to pay a marine insurance policy issued to the plaintiff's assignor. Losses were sustained, and in a suit by the plaintiff on the contract the defendant denied its existence as a corporation. It argued that inasmuch as it was a Russian corporation its corporate life had been terminated by a decree of the Soviet government nationalizing the business of insurance companies in Russia. The defendant moved that the plaintiff be directed to reply to their defense. Thereupon, four questions relating to the essence of the defense were certified to the Court of Appeals. Judge Cardozo, speaking for the Court of Appeals, said that the confiscation decrees of Russia were obviously not a defense at all.<sup>33</sup>

Following *Sokoloff vs. National City Bank*,<sup>34</sup> he held that the decree had no effect in the United States, "unless it may be, to such extent as justice and public policy require that effect be given." Justice and public policy did not require that the defendant in the instant case should be pronounced immune from suit. The defendant had complied with the provisions of the New York statutes prescribing the terms under which foreign insurance companies might do business in the state. It had written policies of insurance covering millions of dollars worth of property risks and had

---

<sup>32</sup> 239 N. Y., 1925, 248, 146 N. E. 369.

<sup>33</sup> "A corporation with vitality sufficient to answer a complaint has, by the very terms of the hypothesis, vitality sufficient to permit it to be sued. The shades of dead defendants do not appear and plead." 239 N. Y. 248 at 251.

<sup>34</sup> 239 N. Y., 1924, 158, 145 N. E. 917.



collected the premiums on the same. Such facts showed conclusively that its corporate life had not been terminated.

The court declared that the case was not governed by any technical rules regarding recognition or non-recognition. It was governed by the largest considerations of public policy and justice. Neither exacted an exception in the instant case. Russia might terminate the liability of Russian corporations in Russian courts or under Russian law. But, "its fiat to that effect could not constrain the courts of other sovereignties, if assets of the debtor were available for seizure in the jurisdiction of the forum."<sup>35</sup>

A subsequent case came before the New York courts the same year. It was an action by the Russian Reinsurance Company against Stoddard and the Bankers Trust Company, to recover certain securities which had been deposited in accordance with the New York law to guarantee the performance of insurance contracts. The action was opposed upon the ground that the plaintiff corporation had been dissolved by Soviet decrees: that it was incapable of maintaining a suit in the New York courts.

The directors of the Russian Reinsurance Company had met in Paris after the Soviet Revolution. There they took steps looking to the termination of the trust agreement in New York and the recovery of the deposited securities. The Supreme Court held that the attempted revocation of the trust agreement was invalid: that the corporation had been dissolved by the Soviet decrees. This decision was reversed by an appellate division of the Supreme Court.<sup>36</sup> The Court

<sup>35</sup> *Fred S. James & Co. vs. Second Russian Insurance Co.*, 239 N. Y., 1925, 248 at 252. Same case before the appellate division of the supreme court in 208 App. Div., 1924, 141 and 210 App. Div., 1924, 82. "One government does not . . . help another in enforcing a penalty or forfeiture. . . . If this is so where the foreign statute or decree is that of a recognized government *de jure*, it is still more clearly so where the decree is that of a government to which recognition has been denied. Neither comity nor public policy requires us to enforce a mandate of confiscation at the behest of such a government to the prejudice either of our own citizens or of those of a friendly power seeking justice in our courts," Judge Cardozo, p. 257.

<sup>36</sup> 240 N. Y., 1925, 149.



of Appeals in turn reversed this determination and reinstated the opinion of the trial court.<sup>87</sup>

The Court of Appeals based its decision almost entirely on the possibility that subsequent recovery might be had by the Soviet government against the Bankers Trust Company. True, such recovery could not be had in the courts of the United States, because it would not be supposed that the State Department would recognize a government without requiring the recognized government to abide by any decisions which had been rendered by the courts of the United States, but that did not preclude a recovery against the Bankers Trust Company in some other country which had recognized the Soviet regime.

The court felt that it was repulsive to common sense and justice to declare that the Soviet decrees were of no force in the instant case.<sup>88</sup> Both required that the court give effect

---

<sup>87</sup> 211 App. Div. N. Y., 131.

<sup>88</sup> "For us the law of Russia, in its strict sense, may still be the law as it existed when the czar ruled, for other nations the law of Russia is the law sanctioned by the Soviet Republic. Our view of what is the law of Russia rests upon a juridical conception not always in consonance with fact; in other nations recognition has brought juridical conceptions and facts into harmony. Do these juridical conceptions require us to hold that the law of Russia has remained unchanged since December, 1917; that the Soviet Republic does not exist, and therefore cannot act; that the plaintiff corporation still lives and is domiciled in Russia, and is under the management of its former directors; though we know that its property in Russia has been sequestrated, its directors driven into exile, its business monopolized by an agency which enforces its decrees as if it were a government and is recognized as a government by most of the countries of Europe? Shall we recognize the right of the corporate directors to revoke the deed of trust and to receive property deposited thereunder though their authority is no longer recognized in the country of the corporate domicile, or in the country where the directors reside; though they might probably urge the non-existence of the corporation as a defense to any action brought by policyholders, creditors or stockholders in any forum which gives effect to the decree of nationalization made by the Soviet Republic, and the corporation will be immune from suit here after it withdraws from this jurisdiction? If the logical application of juridical conceptions leads to this result, then we should consider its practical consequences to determine whether we have not been carried beyond the "self-imposed limits of common sense and fairness." We shall not attempt to collate the authorities in order to deduce from them a new general rule which will define these limits. The very nature of the problem shows that general definitions must hamper rather than promote its solution. The facts of each case, the result of each possible decision determines whether that decision accords with common sense and justice.

to the conditions existing in Russia, even though those conditions were created by a force which the court was not ready to acknowledge as entitled to recognition as a government.

On denial of a motion for reargument,<sup>39</sup> the court said that it did not hold that it could not take jurisdiction of some other action in which some measure of relief might be granted which would be fair to the plaintiff and yet afford adequate protection to the defendant. The motion for a reargument was denied "without prejudice to the commencement of a new action for such relief." The court held only that considerations of justice and fairness to the defendant required that the instant case be dismissed.

A slightly different approach was made in *Andre vs. Beha*.<sup>40</sup> A stockholder of a Russian insurance corporation attempted to recover certain assets which had been deposited with the New York Superintendent of Insurance and a trustee prior to the deposition of the czar. The case differed from *Russian Reinsurance vs. Stoddard*,<sup>41</sup> in that the company had done no business in New York since 1917. The plaintiff was not only a stockholder, but also manager of the company under a broad power of attorney issued to him in 1918. The Supreme Court directed the Superintendent of Insurance and the trustee to deliver the securities to the plaintiff upon his receipt.

---

There can be no true precedent in the books when the facts are unprecedented. It remains for us to determine whether the result of the present judgment is contrary to common sense and justice. . . .

"We grant admission to the courts of this state to foreign corporations because of comity. We have not admitted to our comity the Soviet Republic, and the plaintiff denies allegiance to it. The claims based upon comity with a government of the czar, which may exist as a juridical concept, but is in fact not functioning and is without representative here is tenuous. It should not prevail where injustice follows to one of our own nationals. . . .

"To the extent that until that time the courts should not take jurisdiction of this equitable cause of action, both justice and common sense require us to give effect to the conditions existing in Russia, though those conditions are created by a force which we are not ready to acknowledge as entitled to recognition as a state or government." 240 N. Y., 1925, 149, *passim*.

<sup>39</sup> 240 N. Y., 682 memorandum decision.

<sup>40</sup> 211 App. Div. (N. Y.), 1924, 380.

<sup>41</sup> 240 N. Y., 1925, 149. See also *First Russian Insurance Co. vs. Beha*, 240 N. Y., 1925, 601, for a similar case.

An appellate division of the Supreme Court reversed this decision and dismissed the complaint. This court held that the proper proceeding was for a liquidation in accordance with the insurance law of the state, or else the appointment of a receiver as provided by the general corporation laws. It declared that one of the methods suggested should be resorted to in order to protect the creditors, policyholders and stockholders.<sup>42</sup> This decision was affirmed by the Court of Appeals. It held that the plaintiff had no capacity to sue. The court did not discuss the questions relating to Russia, yet, in view of its silence, it may be inferred that the Court of Appeals acquiesced in the opinion of the lower court that to allow the instant suit "would seem to be a travesty on justice."<sup>43</sup>

It has been alleged that one decision of the Court of Appeals of New York in *contra* to the dicta in the Sokoloff and subsequent cases. This is the *Joint Stock Company of Volgakama Oil and Chemical Factory vs. National City Bank*.<sup>44</sup> Plaintiff was a Russian corporation. It sought to recover a deposit made in 1918. The defendant claimed that the plaintiff's entity had been destroyed by the Soviet decrees. The defense was disallowed and judgment given and affirmed in favor of the plaintiff.<sup>45</sup> The courts held that

---

<sup>42</sup> "The undisputed evidence in this case, according to Andre himself," said the court, "is that the company's property was destroyed and sequestered by the Soviet government in 1918. Whether we can regard such seizure as legal or illegal, the fact remains that the company was destroyed by a *de facto* government then and still in power in the country which gave this corporation its birth. It never had birth or legal sanction to exist in this country at all. It did have a license to carry on business here, as a foreign corporation, upon compliance with our laws applicable to such situation. These laws require that the very cash and securities which Andre now seeks should be deposited here as a protection to creditors and policyholders; and these deposits are now here, safely on deposit in accordance with the law. To allow them to be taken out by the plaintiff in the peculiar action sought to be maintained here, without any security or protection to the owners of the property, whether they be policyholders, creditors, or stockholders, would seem to be a travesty on justice." 211 App. Div., N. Y., 380 at 394.

<sup>43</sup> 240 N. Y., 1925, 149.

<sup>44</sup> 240 N. Y., 1925, 368.

<sup>45</sup> 210 App. Div., 1924, 665.

the decrees of the Soviet government would not be considered because of non-recognition. Also the defendant was estopped from raising the defense because it had dealt with the plaintiff as a corporate entity.<sup>46</sup>

This decision was unanimously affirmed by the Court of Appeals, which held that the defendant's corporate entity had not been destroyed by the Soviet decrees.<sup>47</sup> Judge Crane wrote the opinion. He said that unless the "alleged decrees, as stated by the defendant, show that the plaintiff has ceased to exist as a corporation in the land of its creation, the defendant's answer is insufficient and it must pay back the deposit according to its agreement. No matter what has happened to the plaintiff's property or to its method and means of conducting business, if it be a fact that it still exists as a corporation, it is entitled to its property, and may maintain this action."<sup>48</sup> The court examined the decrees relied upon by the defendant. It found that there was "nothing to show that 'nationalization' terminated the plaintiff's corporate existence, or that all its rights to exist in some form had ceased."

But Judge Crane, who wrote the opinion of the Court of Appeals, said that even if the defendant's contention was correct and the facts showed that the Soviet government had actually and effectually terminated the plaintiff's corporate existence so that for all purposes it had ceased to be a corporation in the state of its creation, he personally would be of the opinion that the courts of the United States should not recognize the Soviet decrees in an action at law such as the instant case. Numerous cases, chiefly from the New York

---

<sup>46</sup> Judge McAvoy, who delivered the opinion of the court, said: "Having dealt with the plaintiff as a corporate entity, received the money it holds from plaintiff in its apparent guise, and assumed the obligation to pay out the fund according to its contract as a depository, it cannot equitably be heard now to deny the corporate existence of its depositor to escape liability on its obligation." 210 App. Div., 1924, 665 at 570.

<sup>47</sup> 240 N. Y., 1925, 368.

<sup>48</sup> *Ibid.*, at 374.



Court of Appeals, are cited in support of his position.<sup>49</sup> An examination reveals that these are the very cases in which that court enunciated the exception in favor of justice and public policy, so that the instant case reaffirms rather than denies the exception. In fact it may well be argued that the appellate division of the Supreme Court had recognized the exception inasmuch as Judge McAvoy held that the defendant could not equitably be heard to deny the corporate existence of its depositor in order to escape liability.<sup>50</sup>

In the above cases the courts allowed the suits to be prosecuted by the Russian corporations, or their assignees, despite the contention that the corporations had been destroyed. The courts did not feel that justice and public policy required that the suits be disallowed, although such considerations prevent the Soviet Republic as such from instituting any suits in our courts.

There is a latent danger in such decisions, in that all of the parties in interest may not be before the court. In case of recognition of the Soviet regime by the United States these results would be further complicated by the retroactive effect of such recognition. Some means should be devised whereby the proceeds of such litigations can be protected from dissipation by irresponsible persons and until the rights of all parties in interest are satisfied.

<sup>49</sup> *Sokoloff vs. National City Bank*, 239 N. Y. 158; *James & Co. vs. Second Russian Insurance Co.*, 239 N. Y., 248; *Wulfsohn vs. Russian Socialist Federated Soviet Republic*, 234 N. Y. 372; R. S. F. S. R. 235 N. Y. 255; *Gibbs vs. Societe Industrielle des Metaux*, 1890, 25 Q. B. D. 399.

<sup>50</sup> This view has received its latest affirmation in *James & Co., vs. Russia Insurance Co.*, 247 N. Y., 1928, 262 at 269 where Mr. Justice O'Brien said: "In normal times under a government recognized by our own as a sovereign even *de facto*, the question of authority to effect the transfer of title to property located in New York might become the subject of serious doubt. If the decrees of the Soviet Republic were for all purposes accorded full credit by our government . . . the Russian corporation on April 1, 1919, might be regarded as dead, its assets confiscated by the Republic, its liabilities obliterated and its directors mere fugitives and refugees shorn of all power even to conserve its property amid the chaos of revolution. We have never recognized that government. Its decrees are treated as a nullity except in so far as there is need to recognize them for the purpose of promoting justice and equity as we regard justice and equity." Italics ours.



The dictum of Judge Cardozo in the Sokoloff case has served as a basis on which the courts have gradually evolved the new rule. The refusal of the political departments to hold official intercourse with the Soviet Republic should not be allowed to affect private rights dependent upon provable existing conditions in Russia. Reason and justice demand that effect should be given in the courts of non-recognizant states to those acts in Russia upon which rights and obligations depend, provided that in so doing the courts neither encroach upon nor dictate a policy to the political departments of the government.

If rights and obligations are to be adjudicated in the American courts, to that extent, at least, effect should be given to the Soviet decrees. This seems all the more necessary where recognition is withheld for a considerable length of time. It is inexpedient for the courts to close their eyes to the present regime in Russia and to presume a continuation of the old order which is inconsonant with the facts and the ends of justice. Judge Cardozo and his associates of the New York Court of Appeals have indicated the legal avenue of escape. The decisions of this court are founded upon both reason and precedent and it is to be hoped that the federal courts will bring their decisions in accord therewith.

## CHAPTER VIII

### CONCLUSIONS

The writer submits that the cases discussed justify the following conclusions. First: Recognition is the admission of the facts of state life. It does not create the state: rather, state life is a condition requisite to recognition. Yet, recognition is necessary before a state or government can assert its fundamental rights of independence, existence and intercourse through diplomatic channels or through the courts of foreign states.

Second: The recognition function is vested in the political departments of the government and may be exercised at their discretion. The judicial branch must act in unison with the political departments in the conduct of foreign relations. Once those departments have acted, whether favorably or unfavorably, the courts are bound thereby. The courts cannot entertain evidence as to the competency or incompetency of a recognized foreign government. They take judicial notice of the acts and decisions of the political departments.

Third: In the absence of a definite attitude, either favorable or unfavorable, on the part of the political departments of the government the courts have a choice of three alternatives. They may regard "the ancient state of things as remaining unaltered," or deny completely the existence of state life, or evaluate the governmental competency as a matter of fact. The first alternative arose from the cases involving the recognition of new states although it has since been applied to new governments in old states. The last two emerged with the shift of governments within recognized states. The majority of the courts have adopted the first

alternative: they regard the acts of unrecognized *de facto* governments as of no effect. Some of them even refuse to acknowledge governmental existence in the absence of recognition. When the question of injustice has been raised the courts have replied that the proper remedy is an appeal to the political departments and not to the judiciary. The third alternative is in the ascendency at the present time. Subject to fixed limits, the writer regards it as the best of the three and it may well be that the new problems arising out of the continued non-recognition of the Soviet Republic will be worked out by this method.

Fourth: Recognition is retroactive in its effects. It validates all the official acts of the recognized government, or state, which have been performed within its jurisdiction since the "commencement of its existence." The writer concludes that this is too ambiguous and that it would be advisable for the political departments to present their "diary of events" with reference to a government in question to the courts and allow the courts on the basis of these facts to decide in each case before them whether the government in question had "commenced its existence" at the time the acts in litigation were committed.

Fifth: A recognized state with a recognized government may sue in the courts of a recognizing state. Recognized states with unrecognized governments should not be permitted to sue where the political departments of the non-recognizing government have declared against the *de facto* situation. However, in the absence of an adverse determination recognized states with unrecognized governments, subject to two limitations, should be permitted to sue. In the first place the right to sue should depend upon the nature of the action. If it is in any way political it should not be entertained: the suit should be in accord with the public policy of the government of which the court is an instrumentality. In the second place the suit should be brought in the

name of the state: not in the name of the government. State property belongs to the national sovereignty. It does not belong to the faction which happens to be in power at a designated moment. If this be true, then the state should be able to protect its property in the courts of foreign states.

The writer is conscious that such a proposal is open to objection in that in case an unrecognized government never achieves recognition a subsequent recognized government might hold the recognizant state to account for all properties which it had turned over to the usurping factions. Also, in so far as non-recognition is an instrument of policy of the political departments it is thereby rendered less effective. Admit that it is open to these objections, nevertheless it seems inequitable that the national sovereignty should be unwillingly deprived of state property.

In order to avoid such injustice and at the same time overcome the objections to such a proposal, the writer concludes that Congress should provide that such properties or the moneys derived therefrom should be held in trust by the United States for the benefit of the recognized state, pending recognition of the government by the political departments. In the absence of such legislation the courts should administer the properties until such time as the political departments deem it expedient to act. The right to succeed to state property located in foreign states should depend upon recognition.

Sixth: A recognized government within a recognized state, together with its diplomatic representatives and governmental property, is immune from process in the courts of a recognizant state. However, there has been confusion among the courts concerning the immunity of state owned property used for commercial purposes. This point remains unsettled in the United States: it should be handled by the political departments of the government. The judicial code should be revised, either to include or to exclude, the new governmental activities.

It may prove expedient to clarify, if not to incorporate, restrictions as to the immunities of commercially-used property through international conventions. Resolutions looking to this end were adopted by the Institute of International Law as early as 1891. The principle was to some extent written into the recent Treaty of Peace with Germany.<sup>1</sup> Further steps in this direction may be looked for in the future as the socialization of the state advances.

Seventh: Where a *de facto* government functions without question, the courts of non-recognizant states should admit this fact and give effect to its acts and decrees in so far as they affect individual rights, where equity and public policy require it to do so, and where such acts are not contrary to the law of the forum. Courts of recognizant states should give effect to the facts which flow from the acts of such governments as fairness requires that it be done. Acting on this principle the courts have held that American corporations doing business in Russia at the time of the confiscatory decrees were not dissolved by the decrees and cannot escape liability on their contracts executed in foreign states to be performed in Russia by setting up the Russian decrees as a defense. Under the same rule Russian corporations doing business in the United States cannot set up their dissolution as a defense in order to escape liability where they have complied with the American laws and have property within the jurisdiction of the court.

The Court of Appeals of New York has repeatedly held that effect should be given to the factual results which flow from the Soviet decrees in so far as it will promote justice. It may be argued that the refusal of the courts to give full effect to such decrees appears to conflict with the rule which holds that the courts of one state will not sit in judgment on the acts of another state, but the latter rule is based on comity

---

<sup>1</sup> This provision is recited by Judge Mack in his opinion in the initial *Pesaro* decision. See also A. K. Kuhn, *Competence of the Courts in Regard to Foreign States*, 21 A. J., 1927, 742.



and is therefore not applicable to unrecognized governments. Moreover, the law is more than logic.

In saying that effect would be given to the acts of unrecognized governments within recognized states so far as justice and public policy require, the courts have inverted a well established rule which holds that effect will be given to all acts of recognized governments so long as they are not in conflict with public policy or the laws of the forum. The exception of justice and public policy furnishes the legal avenue of escape from the Russian dilemma. It is to be hoped that the federal courts will look with more approval on the doctrine. It evades the encroachment upon the province of the political departments and at the same time reduces the possibilities of international complications. Although the doctrine is unsustained by precedents, in fact is opposed by judicial utterances, yet it is sustained by both reason and analogy. It marks an advance in the law: it demonstrates that the courts have not allowed their eyes to be filled by the dust of obsolete theories or to be blinded to the realities of international life in which the United States stands destined to play a dominant rôle.

FINIS

## BIBLIOGRAPHY

### PERIODICALS

#### American Journal of International Law

Concerning the Recognition of New Governments by the United States, C. C. Hyde, v. 13, 1919, p. 306.

Power of Recognition, C. A. Berdahl, v. 14, 1920, p. 519.

Recognition of New Governments, A. S. Hershey, v. 15, 1921, p. 59.

Suits brought by Foreign States with Unrecognized Governments, Q. Wright, v. 17, 1923, p. 742.

Award of Mr. Chief Justice Taft as the Sole Arbitrator in the Controversy Between Great Britain and Costa Rica, v. 18, 1924, p. 147.

Recent Recognition Cases, comments, v. 19, 1925, p. 263.

Editorial on Difference in Recognition of Government, etc., v. 20, 1926, p. 541.

Application of Soviet Laws and Exception of Public Order, M. Habicht, v. 21, 1927, p. 238.

Competence of the Courts in regard to Foreign States, A. K. Kuhn, v. 21, 1927, p. 742.

#### American Law Review

Recognition of a New State: Is It an Executive Function?, W. L. Penfield, v. 32, 1898, p. 390.

Recognition in International Law, N. D. Houghton, v. 62, 1928, p. 228.

#### American Political Science Review

Recognition of the Czechoslovak Nation, comment, v. 12, 1918, p. 715.

#### Bi-Monthly Law Review

Can the United States Recognize Ireland Without Committing a Breach of International Law in Reference to Great Britain?, L. J. Ward, v. 5, 1922, p. 129.

#### Boston University Law Review

Recognition of Soviet Russia, E. A. Harriman, v. 5, 1925, p. 15.

#### Central Law Journal

Recognition of New Governments, C. Pergler, v. 98, 1925, p. 61.

#### Columbia Law Review

Juristic Status of Foreign States, O. K. Fraenkel, v. 25, 1925, p. 544.

## The Constitutional Review

No Recognition of Soviet Russia, comment, v. 7, 1923, 248.

The Question of Recognizing the Soviet, comment, v. 10, 1926, p. 125.

Big Business Refuses Russian Recognition, comment, v. 11, 1927, p. 248.

## Cornell Law Quarterly

Actions Against a Foreign Sovereign, F. B. Wettig, v. 10, 1924-1925, p. 390.

The Russian Government in Our Courts, Boardman Wright, v. 11, 1925-1926, p. 49.

Effect in American Courts of the Decree of an Unrecognized Government, Alexander Pirnie, v. 11 1925-1926, p. 99.

## Harvard Law Review

Responsibility of the State in England, Harold J. Laski, v. 32, 1918, p. 447.

Actions Against the Property of Sovereigns, Charles H. Weston, v. 32, 1919, p. 266.

Judicial Determination of the Status of Foreign Governments, comment, v. 35, 1919, p. 607.

## Michigan Law Review

The Executive, Legislative and Judicial Recognition of International Law in the United States, Charles G. Fenwick, v. 11, 1912, p. 296.

International Recognition and The National Courts, notes, v. 18, 1920, p. 531.

The Unrecognized Government or State in English and American Law, Edwin D. Dickinson, v. 22, 1923, p. 29 and p. 118.

## Minnesota Law Review

Recognition of De Facto Governments and the Responsibility of States, J. W. Stinson, v. 9, 1924-1925, p. 1.

## North Carolina Law Journal

Extraterritorial Operation of Confiscatory Decrees of the Soviet Government, J. P. Trotter, v. 3, 1924-1925, p. 88.

## Saint Louis Law Review

Recognition of Changes in Government, S. McKittrick, v. 2, 1917, p. 37.

Recognition in International Law, O. H. Thormodsgard and R. D. Moore, v. 12, 1927, p. 108.

## Solicitor's Journal and Weekly Reporter

Recognition of Governments, comment, v. 62, 1917-1918, p. 359.

Legal Consequences of the Break with Russia, comment, v. 71, 1927, p. 504.

Confiscatory Decrees of Foreign Governments, comment, v. 72, 1928, p. 5.

## Texas Law Review

The Effect Upon Private Property Rights of the Acts and Decrees of Revolutionary Governments, W. L. Matthews, v. 4, 1925-1926, p. 226.

## Yale Law Journal

A Foreign Sovereign in an American Court: a Novel Case in International Practice, J. W. Foster, v. 9, 1899, p. 283.

Legal Aspects of the Panama Situation, Edwin Maxey, v. 13, 1903, p. 85.

Rights of States under International Law, P. M. Brown, v. 26, 1916, p. 85.

So-called De Facto Recognition, Thomas Baty, v. 31, 1921, p. 469.

Effect of Soviet Decrees in American Courts, Louis Connick, v. 34, 1924, p. 499.

Sovereign Immunity, E. Angell, v. 35, 1925, p. 150.

## University of Pennsylvania Law Review

Nationalisation of Joint Stock Banking Corporations in Soviet Russia and its bearing on their legal Status abroad, P. Wohl, v. 75, 1927, pp. 385, 527, 622.

## TEXTS AND SPECIAL STUDIES

## British Yearbook of International Law

1921-1922, 1922-1923, 1923-1924, 1924-1925, 1925-1926.

## Brown, Philip Marshall

International Society, New York, 1923.

International Realities, New York, 1917.

## Brunet, Rene

New German Constitution, New York, 1922.

## Corbett, Pitt

Leading Cases on International Law, London, 1922, vol. 1.

## Corpus Juris

Volume 33.

## Corwin, E. S.

President's Control of Foreign Relations, Princeton, 1917.

## Crandall, S. B.

Treaties: their Making and Enforcement, 2d ed., Washington, 1916.

## Davis, G. B.

Elements of International Law, 3d ed., New York, 1908.

## Dickinson, E. D.

Equality of States in International Law, Cambridge, 1920.

## Duguit, Leon

Law in the Modern State, New York, 1919.

- Edmunds, Sterling  
Lawless Law of Nations, Washington, 1925.
- Foulke, Roland R.  
International Law, 2 volumes, Philadelphia, 1920.
- Fraenkel, Osmond K.  
A Digest of Cases on International Law Relating to Recognition of Governments, American Office of Institute of Soviet Laws of University of Moscow, 1925.
- Goebel, Julius, Jr.  
Recognition Policy of the United States, New York, 1915.
- Hall, W. E.  
International Law, Oxford, 1909.
- Halleck, H. W.  
International Law, 2 volumes, London, 1908.
- Hershey, A. S.  
Essentials of International Public Law and Organization, New York, 1927.
- Houghton, N. D.  
De Facto Governments, unpublished manuscript, 1927.
- Hyde, C. C.  
International Law, 2 volumes, Boston, 1922.
- Kent, James  
Commentary on International Law, Cambridge (Eng.), 1878.
- La Garde, Ernest  
La Raconnaissance du Gouvernement des Soviets, Paris, 1924.
- Lawrence, T. J.  
Principles of International Law, London, 1911.
- McBain, H. L. and Rogers, L.  
New Constitutions of Europe, Garden City, 1922.
- Mathews, John M.  
Conduct of American Foreign Relations, New York, 1922.
- Moore, John B.  
Digest of International Law, 8 volumes, Washington, 1906.
- Moyer, G. S.  
Attitude of the United States toward the Recognition of the Soviet Republic, Philadelphia, 1926.
- Opinions of the Attorney General  
Volume 7.
- Oppenheim, Lassa Francis Lawrence  
International Law, 2 volumes, 3d ed., London, 1920.
- United States  
Senate Document No. 40, 52d Congress, 2d session.
- Ruling Case Law  
Volume 15.



- Wharton, Francis  
Digest of International Law of the United States, 3 volumes.  
Washington, 1886.
- Wheaton, Henry  
International Law, 5th English edition, London, 1916.
- Wilson, G. G. and Tucker, G. F.  
International Law, New York, 1922.
- Woolsey, Th. D.  
Introduction to the Study of International Law, New York,  
1899.

## NEWSPAPERS

- New York Times  
December 3, 1913, address of President Wilson.  
January 23, 1917, address of President Wilson.
- United States Daily  
December 13, 1927, report on case of State of Russia vs. Lehigh  
Valley Railway Company.

## INDEX

- Aliens: admission and deportation, a political question, 27 n.
- Anti-trust laws: extraterritorial operation of, 84.
- Argumedo: Governor of Yucatan, action against, 66.
- Bacon, Senator: resolution of, 24.
- Bakhmeteff: Ambassador to United States, capacity to institute suits, 120.
- Bankers Trust Co.: sued by an unrecognized government, 150.
- Bankes, Lord Justice: judgment on exact date of retroactive effect, 109.
- Banks: nationalization of by Soviets, 101.
- Belgium: method followed in recognition of, 19 n.
- Belligerency: recognition of, 27 n.
- Best, Lord Justice: opinion in *Yrissari vs. Clement*, 70.
- Blake: argument of one, 32.
- Bolivia: method followed in recognition of, 21 n.
- Boundaries: determination of, political question, 35 n.
- Bradley, Mr. Justice: opinion in the *Sapphire*, 115.
- Brazil: method followed in recognition of, 20.
- Breakwater*: the vessel, 35.
- Brooks, Judge: opinion in the *Hornet*, 60.
- Buenos Ayres: date of independence, 10-11; status prior to recognition, 71.
- Cardozo, Judge: opinion in *James & Co. vs. Second Russian Insurance Co.*, 148.
- Carranza, General: government of paramount force, 77; retroactive effect of recognition by U. S., 66, 93.
- Castine, Maine: *de facto* status of, 68.
- Catton: vice-consul of Chile, immunity and recognition, 43.
- Central American Federation: recognition of, 20.
- Changes in governmental forms: international personality of state and, 123 n; rights and liabilities unaffected by, 125.
- Chase, Mr. Justice: opinion in *Ware vs. Hylton*, 88.
- Chile: status prior to recognition, 70.
- Christophe, Prince: *de facto* status, 30.
- Civil Rights cases: distinction made in, 80.
- Clarke, Mr. Justice: opinion in *Oetjen* and *Ricaud* cases, 78.
- Colombia: method used in recognition of, 20.
- Comity: basis of capacity of foreign corporations to sue, 151 n; basis of capacity of foreign governments to sue, 115, 116 n; basis of immunity of foreign states from suit, 128, 137 n, 138 n; not the basis of immunity of foreign states from suit, 129.
- Commencement of state's existence: all acts valid from, 90; rule may be questioned, 109; ultimately courts must determine the exact date of, 110.
- Commercial activities: immunity of foreign sovereigns when engaged in, 134.
- Commissions: awards, not included in study, 2.
- Confederation: American, retroactive effects of acts of, 87.
- Confiscatory decrees: effect to be given in absence of recognition, 155; legality of, by Mexico, 92, 93, 94, 95; by Russia, 96, 128.
- Consuls: appointment of as a method of recognition, 19; immunities of, 90.
- Corporation: defunct, capacity to sue in courts of non-recognizant states, 154; dangers latent therein, 154; liability of as distinct from stockholders, 136.

- Costa Rica: *de facto* jurisdiction of, 85; dispute with Great Britain, 10; method used in recognition of, 20.
- Crane, Judge: opinion in *Joint Stock Co. vs. National City Bank*, 153.
- Cuba, Republic of: non-recognition of, 60.
- Customs duties: payment to *de facto* authorities though unrecognized cancels further liability, 141, 143.
- Czecho-Slovakia: method used in recognition of, 23.
- De facto* government: definition, 13; essential characteristics, 13.
- De facto* situations: treatment of by courts, 56.
- De jure* government: definition, 12.
- Dietrich, Judge: opinion in *Rogdai*, 124 n.
- Dominican Republic: method used in recognition of, 19 n.
- Duncan, Peter: discoverer of Navassa Island, 39 n.
- Emergency Fleet Corporation: non-immunity from suit, 134.
- England: as *de facto* government, 13.
- Esher, Lord: judgment in *Mighell vs. Sultan of Johore*, 76.
- Euryale: transport, 114.
- Executive function: recognition as, 156.
- Exequatur*: granting of as a method of recognition, 19; unrevoked, effect on the courts, 43-44, 89.
- Falkland Islands: attitude of United States toward, 35-38; jurisdiction over, 59.
- Federated Republic of Central America: capacity to sue, 118.
- Firm possession: Carranza in, 78; necessity for, 69.
- Firmans: as source of information for the courts, 74.
- Ford, Judge: opinion in *Sokoloff vs. National City Bank*, 79.
- Foreign office: British, communications from, 106; interpreted, 48-49, 51; source of information for the courts, 75.
- Foreign Relations Committee: attitude toward Russia, 117.
- Foulke, R. R.: definition of recognition, 8.
- France: recognition of, 20.
- Francis, Ambassador: accredited to Provisional Government, 22.
- Fuller, Mr. Chief Justice: opinion in *Underhill vs. Hernandez*, 83.
- Genet, M.: reception of, 20.
- Georgia: legality of confiscatory acts of, 88.
- Goddard, Judge: opinion in *Russian Gov't vs. Lehigh Valley Railway Co.*, 120.
- Government: *de facto* vs. *de jure*, importance of distinction, 14-16.
- Guatemala: method used in recognition of, 19 n.
- Haiti: method used in recognition of, 21 n.
- Hall: views on recognition, 8.
- Harriet*: vessel, 35.
- Hawaii: method used in recognition of, 22.
- Heyes, General: 142.
- History: capacity of courts to examine, 70, 74.
- Holland: independence prior to recognition, 71.
- Holmes, Mr. Justice: opinion in *American Banana Co. vs. United Fruit Co.*, 84.
- Honduras: method used in recognition of, 21 n.
- Immorality: acts of by foreign states, 99.
- Immunity: *See* comity; claimed by, foreign sovereigns, 127; heads of states, 75; local sovereign, 126; unrecognized governments, 127, 130; delimited, 134; judicial, of acts of foreign sovereigns, 103, 104, 105, 106; methods used to raise, 138; no change in law, 135 n; non-governmental enterprises of foreign states, 134; recognition and, 126, 129.
- Incorporation: validity granted, cases of unrecognized government, 73.
- Indians: status as political question, 27 n.
- Ingraham, Mr. Justice: opinion in *Murray vs. Transit Co.*, 92.

- Injustice: result of rule on retro-active effects, 64.
- Insular cases: distinction in, 80.
- Insurgency: recognition of, 27 n.
- Internal sovereignty: ability of courts of non-recognizant states to give validity to acts of, 80; exercise always lawful, 85; exercise of not to be questioned in foreign courts, 82; reasons, 83; limitations on judicial immunity of acts of, 86.
- International Law: part of municipal law, 56 n; sanctions of, 6-7 n; true law, 6.
- Interpretations: necessity for in cases of communications from foreign office, 47; examples of, 48-50.
- Italy: recognition of by German states, 11 n.
- Johore, Sultan of: 75.
- Johnson, Mr. Justice: opinion in *La Conception*, 34, 70.
- Jones: argument of in *Foster vs. Neilson*, 35.
- Judicial notice: methods followed in taking, 46-47; taken of foreign sovereigns, 76 n; taken of recognition by political departments, 25; taken of sources of information, 39 and n.
- Jugo-Slavia: method used in recognition of, 23.
- Juniper*: vessel, 100.
- Jurisdiction: *prima facie* territorial, 84.
- Juristic determination: state life and, 68.
- Justice and common sense: Cardozo and, 148; genesis of the view, 117 n; modern applications, 146; validity accorded acts of unrecognized states if required by, 145.
- Kay, Lord Justice: opinion in *Mighell vs. Sultan of Johore*, 76.
- Krassin delegation: legality of sales made by, 97.
- Legal capacity: recognized governments and, 112; recognized states and, 116; unrecognized governments and, 116; test of, 116, 157.
- Lemus, Morales: 60.
- Letters of Credence*: as method of recognizing new governments, 22.
- Liability: state, based on consent, 132; unrecognized governments and, 129.
- Lloyd George: attitude toward Russia, 110.
- Louisiana: *de facto* status of, 72.
- McAvoy, Judge: opinion in *Pelzer vs. United Dredging Co.*, 63 n, 64.
- McLean, Mr. Justice: opinion in *Williams vs. Suffolk Insurance Co.*, 37, 59.
- Machado, 113.
- Marshall, Mr. Chief Justice: opinion in *Divina Pastora*, 34; *Rose vs. Himely*, 56; *United States vs. Palmer*, 32, 69.
- Martens, Ludwig: attempts to secure control of Russian property in United States, 44; deported, 117.
- Mexico: events from 1913-1923, 1; legality of acts when unrecognized, 144.
- Moore, John Bassett: views on recognition, 11.
- Napoleon III: deposition did not abate pending suits, 114.
- National City Bank: depository of Soviet government, 116; sued for failure to pay at Petrograd branch, 78.
- Nationalization: retroactive extra-territorial effect of, 103.
- Navassa Island: jurisdiction over, 38.
- Neutrality laws: violation of, 30, 60.
- Nicaragua: method used in recognition of, 20; retroactive effect of recognition of Rivas-Walker government, 91.
- Non-existent: *de facto* government as, 62; unrecognized government as, 67.
- Non-importation Act of 1809: violation of, 27-30.
- Non-governmental functions: *See* immunity.
- Nullity: confiscatory acts of Soviets as, 130.
- Obiter dictum*: *Rose vs. Himely* as, 29; *United States vs. Trumbull* as, 90.

- Omsk All-Russian Government: legal capacity of, 131, 133.
- Oppenheim: views on recognition, 8 n.
- Pacha, Ishmail: Khedive of Egypt, 74.
- Panama: method used in recognition of, 20.
- Paramount force: characteristics of, 16, 74; proved by evidence, 77; Soviet regime as, 79; treatment of by the courts, 16.
- Pending suits: continued in name of state, 112, 114.
- Penfield, W. L.: recognition as an executive function, 20 n.
- Pereyra, General: validity of decrees of, 93.
- Peru, *de facto* status: 15; method used in recognition of, 21 n.
- Petion, Prince: *de facto* status, 30.
- Phillimore, Sir Robert: judgment in *Charkieh*, 74.
- Philippine insurgents: validity of acts of, 142.
- Poland: recognition of, 23.
- Political questions: declared attitude on binds judiciary, 26, 40; reasons, 52; differentiation of cases, 25-26; list of, 27 n.
- Pound, Judge: opinion in *Nankivel vs. Omsk All-Russian Government*, 132.
- Preobazhenski: action by, 63 n.
- Prior status: deemed to continue, 62.
- Prize captures: legality of as affects third states, 87.
- Property, private: unaffected by transfer between governments, 129; seized and carried into non-recognizant state, title to, 143, 144.
- Public ministers: interpretation, 21.
- Recognizant state*: meaning of term, 4 n.
- Recognition: admission of state life, 156; condition requisite to state intercourse, 10; confers right to exist, 7; definition, 16-17; executive function, 19-20; governments, states and, 12; importance of, 7; *letters of credence* and, 22; list of authorities on, 7 n; location of power, 17-18; methods of according, 18-19; military power and, 23; nature of, 8; negotiation of treaties, 21; non-agreement of authorities, 8-9; optional, 11-12 and n; political question, 124 n; premature, 17; position of courts on, 9-10; reception of ambassadors and ministers and, 20-21; retroactive in effects, basis of, 87; history of rule, 87, 157; Senate and, 21, 24; time to accord 14 and n.
- Redesdale, Lord Justice: judgment in *Hullett vs. King of Spain*, 113.
- Republican form of government: a political question, 27 n.
- Retroactive effects: entrenched in law in 1917, 92; injustice of doctrine, 66, 101, 102 n, 110; kind of recognition immaterial, 92-95, 97.
- Revier: views on recognition, 8.
- Rivas-Walker government: 91.
- Roche, Judge: opinion in *Luther vs. Sagor*, 100.
- Ross, Judge: opinion in *United States vs. Trumbull*, 90.
- Russia: Soviet, attitude of other states toward, 2; confiscatory decrees of, 139; reasons for refusal to recognize, 121; liable to suit as *de facto* public corporation, 128.
- Russia: state of, suit by, 115 n; survives changes in form of government, 121.
- Salamandra Insurance Co.: status after revocation of charter by Soviets, 65.
- Santo Domingo: severance of relations with France, 28, 29.
- Scrutton, Lord Justice: judgment in *Luther vs. Sagor*, 98, 108.
- Senate: attempts to influence recognition policy of president, 24 n.
- Severance of diplomatic relations: legal effects of, 111.
- Singer Sewing Machine Co.: 144 n.
- Société Co-operative Suisse des Charbons: immunity from suit, 135.
- Sokoloff: suit by, 78.
- Southern Confederacy: *de facto* status, 13, 72.
- Sovereignty: *See* internal sovereignty; perpetuity of, 119.
- State: date of origin, 10-11; fundamental rights of, 6; importance of distinction between state and



- government, 119, 122; socialization, effect on immunity of, 133.
- States system: rise of, 6.
- Stockholders: rights of in foreign non-recognizant states, 151; protection of their rights by such states, 152.
- Stoddard: action against, 149.
- Stody, Mr. Justice: opinion in *Gelston vs. Hoyt*, 30-31, 57; opinion in *La Conception*, 77; opinion in *Williams vs. Suffolk Insurance Co.*, 36; opinion in *United States vs. Rice*, 68.
- Survival: acts of insurgent government depends on, 105.
- Swaze, Judge: opinion in *O'Neill vs. Central Leather Co.*, 77.
- Taft, Mr. Chief Justice: arbitrator between Great Britain and Costa Rica, 10.
- Taney, Mr. Justice: opinion in *Kennett vs. Chambers*, 42-43, 57.
- Texas: attitude of United States toward recognition of, 58; independence and recognition of, 42-43.
- Treaties: interpretation a political question, 27 n; negotiation as a method of according recognition, 18; source of information for courts, 74.
- Ughet, Mr. Serge: in control of Russian affairs in United States, 120; recipient of money, 124.
- Umbrage: 70.
- Unrecognized government: non-entity, 117 n; validity given to acts of, 73, 140.
- United States: a national Union, 18 n; attitude toward Soviet, effect on courts, 121, 128.
- Uruguay: method used in recognition of, 19 n.
- Venezuela: method used in recognition of, 19 n.
- Villa, General: validity of decrees of, 93.
- Virginia: legality of confiscatory acts of 1796, 61.
- Void contracts: not validated by recognition, 89.
- War: a political question, 27 n.
- Warrington, Lord Justice: judgment in *Luther vs. Sagor*, 98, 108.
- Washington, Mr. Justice: opinion in *Clarke vs. United States*, 57; opinion in *King of Spain vs. Oliver*, 113.
- Wilson, President: attitude toward Mexico, 1, 2, 110; recognized Czecho-Slovakia, 23.
- Withdrawal of relations: legal effects of, 16 and n.
- Yucatan: non-recognition of insurgency in, 59.













## Date Due


JAN 7 1968

[illegible]

JX4044  
.H4

153759



ST. OLAF COLLEGE  
JX4044 .H4  
Hervey, John Ga - The legal effects of recognition  
  
3 0111 00216 9091